

THE LAW OF CHURCH AND GRAVE

THE CLERGYMAN'S HANDBOOK OF LAW

BY
CHARLES M. SCANLAN, LL.B.

*Author of "Scanlan's Rules of Order,"
"Law of Fraternities," "Law of Hotels," etc.*

NEW YORK, CINCINNATI, CHICAGO
BENZIGER BROTHERS

PRINTERS TO THE
HOLY APOSTOLIC SEE

PUBLISHERS OF
BENZIGER'S MAGAZINE

1909

Nihil Obstat.

REMY LAFORT,

Censor Librorum.

Imprimatur.

✠ JOHN M. FARLEY,

Archbishop of New York.

NEW YORK, January 15, 1909.

COPYRIGHT, 1909, BY BENZIGER BROTHERS.

PREFACE

THE three learned professions, medicine, law, and theology, overlap; and a man who does not know something of the other two can not be prominent in his own. Laws relating to Church matters are scattered through such a vast array of law books that it would be a burden for a clergyman to purchase them, and without special training he would not know where to look for the law. Therefore a law compendium covering those subjects relating to Church matters must be of great value to a clergyman.

There is another view of this subject. When she was mistress of the world the laws of the Roman Empire were for the Roman citizens, particularly the patricians; the canon law was the law of the Christian people of conquered countries and the Christian plebeians of Rome. In the United States we have the same common law for the President and the hod-carrier, for the multimil-

Preface

lionaire and the penniless orphan, for the clergy and the laity. Consequently, in this practical age a knowledge of the law of the country with which the clergy come constantly in contact is expedient, if not necessary.

The poet says:

"What constitutes a state? . . .

Men, who their duties know,

But know their rights, and knowing, dare maintain."

To insure harmony and good order, every Church should obey the laws of the country; but if any law should impose upon the rights of the Church in any way, the ruling authorities, the cardinal and bishops, if the wrong is national, should unite in a petition to the United States Congress, clearly stating the grievance and asking for its redress.¹ If the grievance should be within a State, the bishop or bishops of the State should present the matter to the Legislature of the State. If the President or the Governor has authority to remedy the matter, go direct to him. Such was the practice of the wisest of the Popes.² The author never knew of an in-

¹U. S. Constitution, Amendments, art. i, art. xiv, sec. 1.

²Lives of the Popes, Montor, vol. i, p. 94; Life of Leo XIII, "Philippine Question."

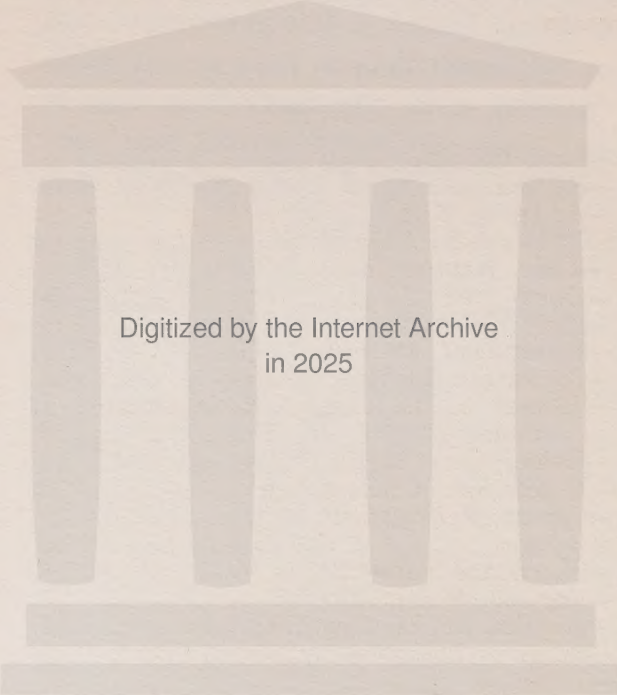
Preface

stance in which a clergyman having a real grievance failed in obtaining a full and fair hearing from the powers that be, from the President downward. This method seems to be more in harmony with the relations of Church and State in a free government, and more intelligent than to have a convention of working men, who have little time to make a study of Church matters, pass resolutions, the passing of which generally ends the action of a convention.

In the chapters that follow, the author has refrained from giving a great multitude of authorities, but has endeavored to give such as are sufficient to sustain the text. For example, under the first section, and many others, a list of citations covering several pages might be given. That would add to the expense of the volume and would not be within its compass. The book will better fulfil its purpose by clear, brief statements of the rules of law, and if a reader desires to investigate further, the citations given will guide his way.

CHARLES M. SCANLAN.

MILWAUKEE, JANUARY 23, 1909.



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2025

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE	v

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

1.—Law, Religion	13
2.—Religions	13
3.—Authority, Right	14
4.—Philosophical Foundations	14
5.—Rome, Natural Justice	14
6.—Canon Law	15
7.—Early Christians	15
8.—Persecutions, Defenses	15
9.—Constantine, Blending the Law	16
10.—“Benefit of the Clergy,” Ecclesiastical Court	17
11.—Estates, Guardianship	17
12.—Middle Ages, Common Law	18
13.—Gratian, Reformation	18
14.—Bologna	19
15.—Church and State	19
16.—England, Roman Law	19
17.—America, English Law, Civil Law	19
18.—Religious Tolerance, Established Church	20
19.—Tribunals	21

CHAPTER II

WHAT IS A CHURCH?

20.—Church, Religious Society	22
21.—Doctrine, Constitution	23

Contents

	PAGE
22.—By-Laws	23
23.—Church, Religious Society	23
24.—Church, Christians, Religion	24
25.—Doctrine, Standard	24
26.—Ecclesiastical Corporations, Religious Quasi-Public Corporations	25
27.—Sect, Sectarianism	25
28.—Sectarian	26
29.—Worship, Services, Mass	27
30.—Parish, Parishioner	29
31.—Clergyman	29
32.—Minister	29
33.—Rector or Pastor	29
34.—Religion	30

CHAPTER III

CONSTITUTIONAL LAW

35.—Religious Tests	32
36.—Test Oath, Attainder	32
37.—Establishment of Religion, Free Exer- cise	32
38.—Sovereignty, States, Bigamy	33
39.—Church of the Latter-Day Saints	33
40.—Crime, Religion	34
41.—Donation, Hostile, Religion	34
42.—Christian Scientist	34
43.—Protestant	35
44.—Hospitals, Sisters, Appropriation	36
45.—Constitution, Rights	37
46.—Aid, Contracts	37
47.—Protestant Teacher	37
48.—Office, God	38
49.—Religious Liberty, Bible, Religious Garb, Wages	38

Contents

PAGE

CHAPTER IV

STATUTORY LAW

50.—Wisconsin, Mississippi, New York . . .	41
51.—Real Estate, Parish, Diocese, Taxation .	42
52.—Riot, Damages	43
53.—Use, Change, Parsonage, Discipline, Doctrines, Curate	43

CHAPTER V

UNINCORPORATED CHURCH SOCIETIES

54.—Partners, Debt, Liability	45
55.—Pastor, Salary	46
56.—Building, Materials	46
57.—Management, Disability	46
58.—Shakers, Sect, Catholic Church, Trus- tees, Funds	47
59.—Contract, Binding	48
60.—Court, Trust	48
61.—Societies, Membership, Forfeiture . .	48

CHAPTER VI

INCORPORATED RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES

62.—Special Laws, General Laws	50
63.—Officers, Discipline, Property . . .	50
64.—Incorporation, Evidence	50
65.—Congregation, Members	51
66.—Temporal Affairs, Management . . .	51
67.—Corporators, Change	52
68.—Constitution, Subsequent Laws . . .	52
69.—Name, Change	52
70.—Church, Regular	53
71.—Notice, Legal	53
72.—Control, Secede, Vested Rights . . .	53
73.—Consolidation, Control, Dissolution .	54
74.—Debts, Limited	55

Contents

	PAGE
75.—Conditions, Effect	55
76.—Suits, Parties	56
77.—Incorporation, Sufficient	57
78.—Dissolution, Fund	57
79.—Reorganization	58
80.—Meetings, Majority, Quorum	58

CHAPTER VII

SUPERIOR AUTHORITY

81.—Protestant Ministers, Bishop	59
82.—Roman Catholic Church, Pope, Bishops, Delegated	59
83.—Bishop, Discipline, Clergy	60
84.—Local, Secular Matters	60
85.—Unincorporated, Authority	61
86.—Tribunal, Action, Appeal	61
87.—Spiritual Authority, Excommunication	62
88.—Constitution, Limited, Decisions	62

CHAPTER VIII

INFERIOR AUTHORITY

89.—Priesthood, Discipline	64
90.—Congregation, Insubordinate, Discipline	64
91.—Pastor, Parish, Relation	65
92.—Clergymen, Citizens	65
93.—Doctrine and Discipline, Authority	65
94.—Sect, Suit, Property	66
95.—Priest, Salary	67
96.—Curate, Induction, Rector	67
97.—Controversy, Tribunal, Decision	68
98.—Priest, Dwelling, Servant	68
99.—Injunction, Bishop, Priest, Trial	69
100.—Confession, Privacy, Authority	70
101.—Debts, Permission, Presumed	70
102.—Official Acts, Subscriptions	70
103.—Exemptions, Clergy	71

Contents

	PAGE
104.—Minister, Contributions, Deposited . . .	71
105.—Fees, Wages, Excess	71
106.—Salary, Fees	72
107.—Clergyman, Salary	72
108.—Curate, Services	72
109.—Minister, Dismissal, Money Advanced .	72

CHAPTER IX

MEMBERSHIP

110.—Business, Religious Membership . .	74
111.—Regular, Doctrines, Support . . .	74
112.—Factions, Authority	75
113.—Faith, Burial	75
114.—Rules, Membership	75
115.—Minor	76
116.—Officers, Non-Members	76
117.—Debts, Unincorporated Parish . . .	76
118.—Execution, Property	77
119.—Incorporated, Subscriptions	77
120.—Expelled, Merits	77
121.—Lay Members, Appointed	77

CHAPTER X

HERESY AND SECESSION

122.—Mother Church, Control	79
123.—Seceders, Funds	79
124.—Society, Foreign Language, Independent	80
125.—Subordinate, Incorporated	80
126.—“Church,” Seceders, Debt	80
127.—Bible, Constitution, Withdrawal . .	81
128.—Majority, Obligation	81
129.—Division, Funds	81
130.—Methodist, Slaveholding, Non-Slaveholding, Quarrel, Schism, Secession	82

Contents

PAGE

CHAPTER XI

EXCOMMUNICATION

131.—Definitions, Minor	83
132.—Major Excommunication	83
133.—Vote, Sentence	84
134.—Trustees, Disqualified	84
135.—Devise, Void	84
136.—Fraternity, Excommunicated, Bequest .	84
137.—Action, Expulsion	85
138.—Forfeiture of Membership	85
139.—Insubordination, Expulsion, Hearing .	85
140.—Injunction, Mandamus, Sepulture . .	86
141.—Expulsion, Illegal	86
142.—Freedom, Faith, Doctrine	86

CHAPTER XII

ELECTIONS

143.—Time, Place, Void	88
144.—Voting, Communicants, Attendance .	88
145.—Voters, Poll List	89
146.—Notice, Quorum, Majority, Strangers .	89
147.—Challenge, Ground	90
148.—By-Laws, Usage	90
149.—Ballot, Hand Vote	91
150.—Hold Over, Successors	91
151.—Majority, Votes Cast	91
152.—By-Law, Tickets	92

CHAPTER XIII

OFFICERS

153.—Charter, By-Laws	93
154.—Unincorporated Church, Incorporated .	93
155.—Trustees, Control	93
156.—Membership, Office	94
157.—Certificate of Election	95

Contents

	PAGE
158.—Term, Successors, Contest	95
159.—By-Laws, Preside	96
160.—Note, Overdraft, Interest	96
161.—Board, Control	97
162.—Treasurer, Accepting a Draft	97
163.—Note, Trustees	98
164.—Money, Powers	98
165.—De Facto Officers	99
166.—Trustees, Thanks, Charge	99
167.—Discretion, Excommunication	100
168.—Key, Possession, Right	100
169.—Church, Bishop, Debts, Salary of a Priest	100
170.—Note, Building Committee	101
171.—Fraud, Trust	102
172.—Superioress, Money	102
173.—Loan, Priest	102
174.—Warden, Wages, Sexton	102
175.—Sewing Circle, Money	103

CHAPTER XIV

MEETINGS

176.—Business, Notice, Meeting	104
177.—Acts, Void, Lawful, Clerk	104
178.—Special Meeting, Notice	105
179.—Meeting, Consent	105
180.—Notice, Principal Service, Custom	106
181.—Adjournment	106
182.—Proof of the Notice	107
183.—Presiding Officer	107
184.—Voters, Rules	107
185.—Quorum, Majority	108
186.—Votes, Challenge, Inspectors, Casting Vote	109
187.—Written Notice, Prayer Meeting	110
188.—Expulsion, Damages	110

Contents

PAGE

CHAPTER XV

CHURCH RECORDS

189.—Evidence, Entries, Minutes	111
190.—Uniformity	111
191.—Marriage, Death, Baptism, Birth, Church Records	112
192.—Certified Copies	112
193.—Rule of Admissibility	112
194.—Proper Record	113
195.—Name, Record	113

CHAPTER XVI

CHURCH TRIBUNALS

196.—Jurisdiction, Privileges	114
197.—Trial, Property, Priest	114
198.—Doubt, Legal Rights	115
199.—Bishop, Priest, Redress	115
200.—Trial, Counsel	116
201.—Removal, Suspension, Trial	116
202.—Charges, Fair Trial, Hearsay Evidence	116
203.—Trial, Testimony, Slander	117
204.—Remedies, Secular Courts	117
205.—Notice, Waiver	118
206.—Appeal, Decision, Limitation	118
207.—Procedure, Judge, Juror, Witness	119
208.—Catholic Discipline	119

CHAPTER XVII

STATE COURTS

209.—Decision, Ecclesiastical Matter	120
210.—Right of Property, Civil Rights . . .	120
211.—Creed, Factions, Property Management	121
212.—Trust, Court of Equity	121
213.—Injunction, Closing Church, Paying Money, Disturbances	122
214.—Suits, Parties	122

Contents

	PAGE
215.—Complaint	123
216.—Church Tribunal, Courts	123
217.—Unincorporated Congregation, Actions, Interest	123
218.—Blasphemy, Sabbath, Lord's Prayer, Bible	124

CHAPTER XVIII

EVIDENCE

219.—Judicial Notice	125
220.—Competent Witness	126
221.—Confessions, Secret Societies	126
222.—Privilege, Answer	127
223.—Admissions, False Statements	128
224.—Anonymous Letter, Clergyman	128
225.—Voire Dire	129
226.—England, Confession	129
227.—United States, Rules	129
228.—Presumptions, Usage	130
229.—Funeral Expenses	130

CHAPTER XIX

CONTRACTS

230.—Business, Religious Service	131
231.—Incorporated Body	131
232.—Mortgage, Deficiency, Judgment	132
233.—Building Contracts	132
234.—Individual Promise, Subscriptions, Sig- nature	132
235.—Special Purpose, Suit	133
236.—Promise, Consideration	134

CHAPTER XX

PEWS

237.—Sold, Rented	135
238.—Incorporeal Hereditament	135

Contents

	PAGE
239.—Catholic Church, Pew Rights	136
240.—Land, Use, Rent Pews	136
241.—Trustees, Sale in Perpetuity	136
242.—Pew, Right to Occupy, Conditions	137
243.—Tax, Assessment	138
244.—Pewholders' Rights	138
245.—Rebuilding, Remodeling	139
246.—Selling Pew on Execution	140
247.—Members, Pew	141
248.—Free Church, Seats, Lease	141
249.—Executors, Pew-Rent	142
250.—Voting, Pew-Rent, Arrears	142

CHAPTER XXI

PROPERTY

251.—Unincorporated Trustee	143
252.—Charter, By-Laws	143
253.—Suits, Corporation, Members	143
254.—Deed, Court, Title	144
255.—Subscription, Lots	144
256.—Misnomer, Identity	144
257.—Adverse Possession, Color of Title	144
258.—Sale, Restrictions	145
259.—Deed	145
260.—Error	145
261.—Mortgage, Bishop, Debts	145
262.—Deed, Trust, Fee	146
263.—Debts, Creditors	146
264.—Mortgage or Sale, Notice, Consent	146
265.—Title, Taxes, Judicial Notice	147
266.—Title, Diocese, Rule	147
267.—Priest, Deed, Funds	147
268.—Monks, Mission, Title	148
269.—Texan, Revolution, Land	148
270.—Priest, Agent, Deed	148
271.—Devise, Uncertainty	149
272.—Donor, Ambiguous Provision	149

Contents

	PAGE
273.—Trust, Evidence	149
274.—Money, Control	150
275.—Church, Building, Removing	150
276.—Church, Use, Division	151
277.—Spanish Territory	151
278.—Trust, Purposes, Doctrines	152
279.—Control, Revenues	152
280.—Leave to Purchase, Title, Canons of the Church	153
281.—Cemetery, Authority	153
282.—Real Estate, Purpose	154
283.—Limitation, Lands	154
284.—Conditions, Bequest, Deed, Time	154
285.—Will, Forfeiture	155
286.—Condition, Quit-Claim	155
287.—Bishop, Trust, Successors	156
288.—Trustees, Vacancy	156
289.—Church, Majority, Change	157
290.—Title, Harmony, Division	157
291.—Perversion, Misuse, Suit	158
292.—Rights, Contracts, Torts, Crimes	158
293.—Cemetery, Assessments	159
294.—Burned, Revert, Vested	159
295.—Abandoned, Revert	160
296.—Uses and Trusts	160
297.—Trust Funds, Account	160
298.—Fund, Diverted, Split	160
299.—Church, Personalty	161
300.—Lease, Purposes	161
301.—Salary, Lien, Equity	161
302.—Bankruptcy, Creditors	162
303.—Jurisdiction, Process	162
304.—States, Property, Restrictions	162
305.—Land, Limitation	163
306.—Corporations, Bequests	164
307.—Collateral Attack	165

Contents

PAGE

CHAPTER XXII

RELIGIOUS SERVICES

308.—Worship, Discipline, Innovations . . .	166
309.—Doctrines, Temporal Affairs . . .	166
310.—Contributions, Presbyterians, Methodists	167
311.—True Religion, Courts	167
312.—Heresy, Injunction	167
313.—Bequest, Sects, Condition	168
314.—Sexton, Undertaker, Authorities . . .	168

CHAPTER XXIII

BEQUESTS, DEVISES, AND GIFTS

315.—Statutes, Wills	169
316.—Masses, Alabama	169
317.—Name, Bequest, Corporation	170
318.—Clergyman, Undue Influence	170
319.—Contest, Secession	171
320.—Bequests, Membership	171
321.—Conditions, Religious Tenets	171
322.—Name, Uncertainty	171
323.—Future Uses, Uncertainty	172
324.—Education, Priesthood	173
325.—Charitable Trust, Cy-Pres	173
326.—Error, Ambiguity	173
327.—Dissolution, Resulting Trust	174
328.—Charity, Institutions	174

CHAPTER XXIV

TAXATION

329.—Purposes, Exempt	175
330.—Lot Isolated, Not Exempt	175
331.—Bishop's Residence, Hospital	175
332.—Parsonage, Rented	176
333.—Masonic Order, Charity, Elks	176
334.—Supporting Church, Mississippi	177
335.—Appropriations, Contracts, Rent . . .	177

Contents

PAGE

CHAPTER XXV

ELEEMOSYNARY INSTITUTIONS

336.—Poor, Institutions, Negligence . . .	179
337.—Surgeon, Gratuitous Services . . .	179
338.—Charitable Institution	180
339.—Charter, Real Estate	180
340.—Mortmain, Title, Trust	180
341.—Public Institutions, Support	181
342.—Nuns, Vows, Property	181

CHAPTER XXVI

SCHOOLS

343.—Parent, Education, State, Parochial Schools	182
344.—Orphan Asylums, School Moneys . . .	183
345.—Contract, Direct Payment, Lease . .	184
346.—Teacher, Lord's Prayer, Exercise . .	185
347.—Ohio, Directors, Bible	186
348.—Public School, Bible, Prayer	186
349.—Text-Books, State	187
350.—Bible, Conscience, Constitution . . .	187
351.—Schoolhouse, Sunday-School Purposes	187
352.—Child, Immoral Character	188
353.—Parents, Studies, Teacher	188
354.—Chastisement, Cruel	188
355.—Schoolmaster, Authority	189
356.—Force, Assistance	189
357.—White, Unmarried	189
358.—Facilities, the Constitution	190
359.—Residents, Public Schools	190
360.—Board, Majority	191

CHAPTER XXVII

PARENT AND CHILD

361.—Custody, Maternal Relatives, Father .	192
362.—Mother, Illegitimate, Father	193

Contents

	PAGE
363.—Legitimized	193
364.—Punishment, Instrument, Murder	194
365.—Guardian, Religion, Courts	194
366.—Convent, Consent	195
367.—Adoption, Rights, Duties	195
368.—Infancy, Manumission, Marriage	196

CHAPTER XXVIII

HUSBAND AND WIFE

369.—Custody, Father	197
370.—Corrective Authority, Services, Domicile	197

CHAPTER XXIX

INDIANS

371.—Indians, Citizens, Wards	199
372.—Schools, Cemeteries, Churches	199
373.—Inspectors, Duties	200
374.—President, Trades	200
375.—Commissioner, School, Rations, Bible, Sectarian	200

CHAPTER XXX

JUVENILE COURTS

376.—Reformatories, Object, Liberty	202
---	-----

CHAPTER XXXI

LIBEL AND SLANDER

377.—Confidential, Tribunal, Malice	203
378.—Member, Officer, Councils	203
379.—Official Communication, Privileged	204
380.—Priest, Pastoral Duties	204
381.—Church, Records, Excommunication	204
382.—Will, Libel, Action	205
383.—Language, Insane, Good Faith	205

Contents

	PAGE
384.—Rector, Bigamy, Tobacco, Liquor . . .	206
385.—Newspapers, Criticisms, Priest . . .	206
386.—Clergyman, Discipline, Tribunals, Testi- mony, Argument	207
387.—Physical Discipline, Imprisonment, Courts	207
388.—Sermon, False Statement, Crime . . .	208
389.—Charges, Robbed, Hypocrite . . .	208
390.—Investigation, Probable Cause . . .	209
391.—Sacraments	209
392.—Obituary, Tolling Bell	209
393.—Newspaper, Profane Swearer . . .	209
394.—Business or Property, Special Damages	210
395.—Justification, Repeating	210

CHAPTER XXXII

CRIMES

396.—Sins, Crimes, Discipline	211
397.—Profane Language, Smoking, Disturb- ance	211
398.—Sunday-School, Church	212
399.—Private School	212
400.—Disturbing a Religious Meeting . . .	212
401.—Common Law, Offense, Statutory Law	213
402.—Services, Violation, Time	213
403.—Force, Priest, Preserve Order . . .	214
404.—Interrupt, Liquors, Traffic	214
405.—Theory, Blasphemy, Crime	214
406.—Religion, God, Ridicule, Virgin . . .	215
407.—Profanity, Proof, Excuse	215
408.—Sunday, Business, Fishing	216
409.—Charity, Necessity, Benefit, Pleasure .	217
410.—Contracts, Marriage, Notice	217
411.—Funeral, Physician, Subscriptions . .	218
412.—Jews, Seventh-Day Observers	218
413.—Societies, Secular Work	218
414.—Sunday, Begins, Ends	219

Contents

	PAGE
415.—Religious Liberty, Law	219
416.—Necessaries, Doctor	219
417.—Christian Healer, Consent	220
418.—Politics	220
419.—Mail, Obscene Language	220
420.—“Fair,” Chances, Gambling	221

CHAPTER XXXIII

CEMETERIES

421.—Statutes, Land	222
422.—United States, Jurisdiction	222
423.—Tombstones, Soldiers	222
424.—Indigent Soldiers, Tombstones	223
425.—State Authority	223
426.—Maryland, Two Acres	223
427.—Consent, Application	223
428.—Charter, Ground, Members	224
429.—Police Power, Trespass, Burial	224
430.—Dwelling, Limits	225
431.—Well, Pollution	225
432.—Exempt, Execution, Mortgage	226
433.—Public, Regulation	226
434.—Nuisance, Public Health, Disease	226
435.—Devise, Easement, Rules	227
436.—Conditions	227
437.—Inherits, Right	227
438.—Certificate	228
439.—Freemason, Title, Right	228
440.—Lots, Fee	229
441.—Deed, Privilege, Heirs and Assigns	229
442.—Access, Purposes	230
443.—Monuments, Inscriptions, Drunkenness, Non-Baptized, Strangers	230
444.—Use, Forfeited	231
445.—By-Laws, Member, Burial	231
446.—Adverse Possession	232
447.—Improvements	232

Contents

	PAGE
448.—Trespass, Injunction	232
449.—Highways, Alleys	233
450.—Abandoned, Bodies	233
451.—Two-Family Lot, Control	233
452.—Burying Dogs, Removal	234
453.—Stranger, Protest, Kin	234
454.—Association, Bishop, Stipulation, Certificate, License, Revocable	234
455.—Rules, Diocese	236
456.—Negroes, Indians	237
457.—Will, Body, Custody	237
458.—Non-Residence, Burial	238
459.—State, Vacate, Equity, Rule	238
460.—Consent, Bishop, Removal	238
461.—Court, Remove, Consent	239
462.—Crime, Fraud, Exhume, Autopsy	240
463.—Tort, Corpse	240
464.—Custodian, Burial, Mutilation	240
465.—Property in a Corpse, Mummy, Executors	241
466.—Rights, Duties, Body, Will	242
467.—Monument, Fence	242
468.—Tombstone, Mother-in-Law	242
469.—Trees, Authority	243
470.—Charitable, Institution, Negligence	243
471.—Equity, Repair, Injuries	243

CHAPTER XXXIV

MISCELLANEOUS

472.—Societies, Law	244
473.—Society, Bishop	244
474.—Priest, Doorkeeper, Policemen, Arrest	244
475.—Saloon, Church, License	245
476.—Y. M. C. A.	246
477.—Students, Vote, Residence	246
478.—“My Wife, Anna Jones,” Divorce, Insurance	247

Contents

	PAGE
479.—Bells, Sick, Injunction	247
480.—Marriage, Impediments, Recording .	248
481.—Charivari, Wedding Pranks . . .	248
482.—Infallibility of Courts	249
483.—Money Stolen, Bailed or Loaned, In- solvency, Gifts	250
INDEX	251

THE LAW OF CHURCH AND GRAVE

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

1. *Law, Religion*.—From the dawn of the science of law it has been influenced by religion or antagonism to religion. This is very evident in the ancient laws of Babylonia, Egypt, Phenicia, Israel, India, and Ireland. It would be impossible to make a study of the law of any of said countries without gaining a knowledge of its religious system, whether pagan or otherwise.¹

2. *Religions*.—Ancient nations might be classified into pagan and those that worshiped the universal God. However, some of the nations at one time were pagan and at other times had a fair conception of the supernatural. Also, in Egypt, the class of higher culture and education believed in the one omnipotent and omniscient Being, but

¹The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 506; Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 328.

the populace, who could be controlled more readily by flattering them in their notions and giving their childish conceptions full sway, worshiped idols.²

3. *Authority, Right.*—In those nations where the ruling authority had the proper conception of the Almighty, there was a strong, persistent growth of law upon the basis of natural right; while in the pagan nations laws were arbitrary and despotic.³

4. *Philosophical Foundations.*—The laws of Greece, down to the time of Plato, were thoroughly pagan. But, following the philosophical foundations laid by Plato and Aristotle, unintentionally and unwittingly the laws of Greece became imbued with the spirit of natural law.⁴

5. *Rome, Natural Justice.*—Prior to the introduction of Grecian law into Rome, the laws of that nation were pagan. Grecian law from its introduction to the time of Octavius was the civilizing element of the empire. Then it took a turn for the worse, the element of natural justice being reduced and the element of arbitrary rule becoming dominant.⁵

²Ancient Egypt, Rawlinson, vol. i, p. 323.

³Historical Jurisprudence. Lee, pp. 98, 164, 274; History of England, Lingard, vol. i, c. vii; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 506.

⁴Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 257.

⁵Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 271.

6. *Canon Law*.—We will now turn to the first period of canon law, which covers the early history of the Church up to the reign of Constantine the Great.⁶

Canon law is composed of the following elements:

1. Holy Scriptures;
2. Ecclesiastical tradition;
3. Decrees of Councils;
4. Bulls and rescripts of Popes;
5. The writings of the Fathers;
6. Civil law.⁷

7. *Early Christians*.—Owing to the persecutions, the early Christians were, in a sense, isolated from the State; they held their property in common, and were governed in matters among themselves by the canon law. However, for want of freedom of discussion and publication, they were unable, even within a single nation of the empire, to promulgate a system of canon law. The foundation of canon law being laid, its development upon the manumission of the Church was rapid.⁸

8. *Persecutions, Defenses*.—During the religious persecutions the Christians almost had law forced into them by surgical opera-

⁶The Beginnings of Christianity, Shahan, 90.

⁷Elements of Ecclesiastical Law, Smith.

⁸Historical Jurisprudence, Lee, p. 387; Justinian, Sandar, p. 21.

tions. The necessity for their making defenses in the Roman tribunals induced many of them to give Roman law a careful study. Also, the great number of Christians held for trial on all sorts of accusations made that branch of the law of the realm very lucrative for lawyers, and called into the field many Christians. Incidentally, men studying for the priesthood made a study of Roman law with a view to avoiding its machinations and continuing their functions as clergymen without being caught in the net of persecution.⁹

9. *Constantine, Blending the Law.*—When Emperor Constantine became a Christian (325 A.D.), there was a great change, and the members of the bar and judges were mostly Christians. It then became necessary for students of law to study the principles of divine right as taught in the Church, and while the books of the civil law were read by students for the priesthood, the Scriptures and the works of the Fathers were read by the students in law, thus blending the law of the two realms to some extent.¹⁰

10. *"Benefit of the Clergy," Ecclesiastical Court.*—As the old Roman Empire de-

⁹The Beginnings of Christianity, Shahan.

¹⁰Universal Church History, Alzog.

cayed and its power waned, the new one, "The Holy Roman Empire," gradually implanted itself in southwestern Europe. The humiliation that the divine law and the clergy suffered in being brought into the common courts gave rise to a system of courts within the Church for the purpose of enforcing her morals, doctrines, and discipline. Those courts were established in all Christian countries and had jurisdiction of all felonies excepting arson, treason, and a few other crimes that from time to time were put under the special jurisdiction of the state courts. Whenever a clergyman was arrested for a crime, he pleaded the "benefit of the clergy," and his case was transferred from the state court to the ecclesiastical court. Also, when a clergyman was convicted in the state court of any crime for which the punishment was death, he could plead the "benefit of the clergy," which was a protection against his execution.¹¹

11. *Estates, Guardianship*.—Besides the jurisdiction already referred to, the ecclesiastical court had jurisdiction over the settlement of estates and the guardianship of

¹¹Law Dictionary, Bouvier, "Benefit of Clergy," "Canon Law"; Blackstone, vol. i, p. 460, vol. iii, p. 61.

children, which varied in different countries and was very indefinite in some of them.¹²

12. *Middle Ages, Common Law.*—During the Middle Ages there was a constant effort on behalf of the ecclesiastical courts to extend their jurisdiction, and a counter-effort on behalf of the state courts to assume jurisdiction of cases under the ecclesiastical law. In England, from the conquest of William the Conqueror to the Reformation, the extension of the jurisdiction of the ecclesiastical courts brought the new element of English common law into the canon law; and much of the canon law, following the jurisdiction assumed by the state courts, became the common law of the kingdom of England.¹³

13. *Gratian, Reformation.*—The canon law reached its full development in the twelfth century, when Gratian, the Blackstone of his age, compiled the system, but it subsequently lost its influence when the Reformation prevailed.¹⁴

¹²Blackstone, vol. i, p. 461.

¹³Justinian, Sandar, p. 21; Cyc, vol. viii, p. 366, vol. xiv, p. 1228; Eq. Jurisprudence, Pomeroy, vol. i, p. 1; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 255 et seq; Blackstone, vol. i, pp. 18-20, 63; Kent, vol. i, p. 10; English Constitution, Creasy.

¹⁴Blackstone, vol. i, p. 82, vol. iv, c. 33; The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 337; Conflict of Laws, Wharton, sec. 172.

14. *Bologna*.—The great school of jurisprudence, both of canon and civil law, was located at Bologna, Italy, which reached its zenith in the thirteenth century. To it students flocked from Western Europe, and from it were obtained the professors of law in the universities of England and other countries.¹⁵

15. *Church and State*.—In most of the Christian countries, the Church and State were united, and many of the judges in the civil courts were clergymen.¹⁶

16. *England, Roman Law*.—On account of England's being subject to Rome in its earliest age, and afterward because of its being conquered by France, the Roman law was pretty thoroughly intermixed with the native English law in the minor matters of the people, and governed in the more important ones.¹⁷

17. *America, English Law, Civil Law*.—The portions of America that were settled by the English, which included the original thirteen colonies, were under the English law. In Virginia the Episcopal Church, which was then the church of England, was made the church of state. Canada and that portion of the United States formerly

¹⁵The American Cyclopedic, "Bologna."

¹⁶The Science of Jurisprudence, Taylor, p. 238.

¹⁷Blackstone, vol. i, pp. 18-20, 79, vol. iv, c. 33.

known as Louisiana were governed by the civil law of France. Wherever the French government had no authority or civil officers, the government was directly under the missionaries of the Church.¹⁸

18. Religious Tolerance, Established Church.—The English law and English ideals prevailing in the original thirteen colonies,¹⁹ there was a strong effort made by many of the delegates to the constitutional convention to have the Episcopal Church made the established church of the new republic. Thomas Jefferson and James Madison were probably the strongest opponents of the scheme, and outside of the great Carroll of Carrollton, they were the most earnest advocates of religious tolerance. The necessity for the fathers of this republic to be united, and their being unable to unite upon any church, caused the idea of an established church to be eliminated. Thus was established in our republic the freedom of conscience and the guarantee that no one shall be persecuted on account of his religious convictions.²⁰

¹⁸Commentaries, Kent, vol. i, c. xi, pp. 342, 473, 515, 525-544, vol. ii, p. 27; Origin and Nature of the Constitution and Government of U. S., U. S. Sup. Ct. Reps., 9 L. Ed., 873.

¹⁹Commentaries, Kent, vol. i, p. 472; Blackstone, vol. i, p. 107.

²⁰Commentaries, Kent, vol. ii, pp. 35-37; Conflict of Laws, Wharton (3rd ed.), vol. ii, pp. 1327-8.

19. *Tribunals.*—The ecclesiastical courts as a part of the state system and the “benefit of the clergy,” have been abolished in England and America. However, as we shall see further on, tribunals in the nature of the ecclesiastical court exist in churches and fraternities of all kinds in the United States.²¹

²¹Law of Fraternities, Scanlan, ch. xxiv; Conflict of Laws, Wharton, sec. 109; *Baxter v. McDonald*, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667; *Morris v. Dart*, 67 S. C., 338; 45 S. E., 753; 100 Am. St. R., 734; *Terrett v. Taylor*, 13 U. S., 43; 3 L. Ed., 650.

CHAPTER II

WHAT IS A CHURCH?

20. *Church, Religious Society.*—Bouvier's definition of "Church" is: "A society of persons who profess the Christian religion." Chief Justice Shaw's definition is: "The church is neither a corporation nor a quasi-corporation, but a body of persons associated together for certain objects under the law. An aggregate body of individuals associated together in connection with a religious society. The term religious society may with propriety be applied in a certain sense to a church as that of religious association, religious union, or the like; yet in the sense church was and is used in our law, it is synonymous with parish or precinct and designates an incorporated society created and maintained for the support and maintenance of public worship. In this, its legal sense, a church is not a religious society. It is a separate body formed within such parish or religious society whose rights and usages are well known and to a great extent defined and established by law."¹

¹Weld v. May, 9 Cushing, Mass., 181.

21. *Doctrine, Constitution.*—A church in law is a mere fraternal organization. It may or may not have a written constitution, but it must have some central doctrine as its foundation or constitution.² Many of the Protestant denominations claim that the entire Bible is their constitution. The Jews may be said to consider the Old Testament as their constitution. All revealed truths may be said to be the constitution of the Catholic Church,³ and when a doctrine concerning faith or morals is authoritatively declared by the Church to be a truth, it becomes a dogma.⁴ The Apostles' Creed is an example of several dogmatic truths. The code of the Church is the Ten Commandments. A few sects, by a majority vote, make and change their constitutions at will.

22. *By-Laws.*—By-laws of the different religious organizations differ widely, from the decrees of the great councils of the Catholic Church down to the vote of the congregation of an independent denomination.

23. *Church, Religious Society.*—A church in one sense is more limited than a religious society; the latter comprehending

²Martin v. State, 65 Tenn., 234.

³A Manual of Catholic Theology, Wilhelm and Scannell, p. xvii, et seq.

⁴A Catholic Dictionary, Addis and Arnold, "Dogma."

all the members of the same faith. Even in the Catholic Church we hear of the Church of France, the Coptic Church, etc., spoken of in this sense. And in a still more limited sense we use the word as a synonym for parish. However, when the word "the" is used before church written with a capital letter, Catholics understand it to apply to the Roman Catholic Church in its entirety, while some non-Catholics apply it to Christendom.

24. *Church, Christians, Religion.*—The missions established in California prior to its admission into the Union were, in law, practically independent organizations and had no legal connection with the Church. Every society organized for the purpose of propagating the practice of religion may be a church in law.⁵ The courts have made a distinction between Unitarians, who are considered Christians, and Deists, Theists, Free Religionists, and other infidels.⁶ A sect or denomination without a given system of faith is not recognized as a religion in law.⁷

25. *Doctrine, Standard.*—To ascertain the tenets and doctrines of a church, resort

⁵In re St. Louis Inst. of Christian Science, 27 Mo. App., 633.

⁶Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9.

⁷State v. Trustees, 7 Ohio St., 58.

must be had to history and to prior and contemporary standard writings of its members on theology.⁸

26. *Ecclesiastical Corporations, Religious, Quasi-public Corporations.*—Ecclesiastical corporations, in the sense in which the word is used in England, Germany, and France, are unknown to the United States, their places being supplied by religious societies or corporations considered as private bodies, in contradistinction to public or quasi-public corporations, such as towns, villages, cities, counties, and state. Therefore, the law of private corporations applies to religious societies and churches.

27. *Sect, Sectarianism.*—The Supreme Court of Nevada defines “sect” as follows: “A religious sect is a body or number of persons united in tenets, but constituting a distinct organization or party, by holding sentiments or doctrines different from those of other sects or people. In the sense intended in the constitution, every sect of that character is ‘sectarian’ and all members thereof are sectarians.”⁹ In Pennsylvania the court adopted the definitions given in the Standard and in Webster’s diction-

⁸Kniskern v. Lutheran Church, 1 Sandford, N. Y., Ch., 439.

⁹State v. Hallock, 16 Nev., 373.

aries.¹⁰ The Supreme Court of Missouri, citing Webster's and the Century dictionaries, gave the following additional definition of sectarianism: "Sectarianism includes adherence to a distinct political party, as much as to a separate sect."¹¹ The Presbyterians¹² and the "Shakers"¹³ have been adjudged sects.

28. *Sectarian*.—"Sectarian" has received more contradictory constructions than any other equally simple word in the English language. In Wisconsin the "King James" Bible was held to be a sectarian book;¹⁴ but in Kentucky it was held that neither the Douay nor the "King James" Bible was a sectarian book.¹⁵ The Missouri court extended sectarian so as to apply to the Republican party.¹⁶ In Illinois an industrial school for girls in which the Catholic Sisters were employed as teachers, was held a sectarian institution;¹⁷ while in Wisconsin,

¹⁰Stephenson v. Hanyon, 7 Dist. Ct. Rep. Pa., 585.

¹¹State v. Board, 134 Mo., 296; 35 S. W., 617.

¹²Synod v. State, 2 S. Dak., 366; 50 N. W., 632; 14 L. R. A., 418.

¹³Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pick., Mass., 172.

¹⁴State v. District Board, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 20 Am. St. Rep., 41; 7 L. R. A., 330.

¹⁵Hackett v. Brooksville, 27 Ky. L., 1021; 87 N. W., 792; 69 L. R. A., 592.

¹⁶State v. Board, 134 Mo., 296; 35 S. W., 617; 56 Am. St. Rep., 503.

¹⁷County v. Industrial School, 125 Ill., 540; 18 N. E., 183; 1 L. R. A., 437; 8 Am. St. Rep., 386.

the "Wisconsin Industrial School for Girls," a private corporation organized and conducted by Protestant ladies, has received appropriations from the State and has had its reports published at state's expense, as a non-sectarian institution.¹⁸ In New York the religious garb of the Catholic Sisters was practically decided to be sectarian;¹⁹ but in Pennsylvania and Wisconsin it was decided that the dress of the Sisters was not sectarian.²⁰

29. *Worship, Services, Mass.*—Any act of adoration, reverence, praise, thanks, honor, or veneration given to God, is religious worship.²¹ A Sunday-school where the Bible was read and a hymn sung and a state temperance camp-meeting where a prayer was said and hymns were sung, were held to be places of divine worship.²² But a priest's house where he had a room fitted up for a

¹⁸"Wis. Industrial School for Girls," Wisconsin Blue Book. Session Laws of Wis., 1907, p. 1416 (index to Acts). Wis. Industrial School for Girls v. Clark Co., 103 Wis., 651; 79 N. W., 422.

¹⁹O'Connor v. Hendrick, 184 N. Y., 421; 77 N. E., 612.

²⁰Hysong v. Gallitzen, 164 Pa., 629; 30 At., 482; 44 Am. St. Rep., 623; 26 L. R. A., 203; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908). A good résumé of the subject is given in a footnote in 105 Am. St. R., 151.

²¹Stafford v. State, 45 So., 673. A Protestant Dictionary, Wright & Neil, and Webster's Dictionary, "Worship." A Catholic Dictionary, Addis and Arnold, "Latria."

²²Gass's App., 73 Pa., 46; 13 Am. Rep., 726; State v. Norris, 59 N. H., 536.

chapel, was held to be not a place of worship.²³ It is very difficult to draw a line—no matter what curves you may give it—between the Protestant system of worship, which consists of the reading of the Bible, the singing of hymns, and the reciting of prayers, and such services in the public schools. Also, there would seem to be no *legal* difference between a prayer said or a hymn sung by a Catholic and a Protestant. As we have no established church in this country, we have no standard for prayers, hymns, or music.²⁴

More solemn and impressive than her prayers adapted for schools is the Mass of the Catholic Church, defined thus: "The Mass is the unbloody sacrifice of the body and blood of Christ."²⁵ It is defined in 26 Cyc, 940, as follows: "A religious ceremonial or observance of the Catholic Church;²⁶ a Catholic ceremonial celebrated by the priest in open church, where all who choose may be present and participate therein;²⁷ the sacrifice in the sacrament of

²³St. Joseph's Church v. Assessors, 12 R. I., 19; 34 Am. R., 597; Gerke v. Purcell, 25 Ohio, 229; Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., "Worship."

²⁴Ante, 28; Post, 346.

²⁵Catholic Catechism.

²⁶Sherman v. Baker, 20 R. I., 446; 40 At., 11; 40 L. R. A., 717.

²⁷Webster v. Surghow, 69 N. H., 380; 45 At., 139; 48 L. R. A., 100.

the Eucharist or the consecration and oblation of the Host."²⁸

30. Parish.—A parish has two meanings. In some States it is a minor division of public territory; but in States where there is no such division of territory, the State using instead "county" or "town," a parish rather applies to the people belonging to a particular church, who worship at a particular place. It is in the latter sense in which a parish should be construed in church law.²⁹

Parishioner.—A parishioner must be defined in harmony with the meaning of the word "parish."³⁰

31. Clergyman.—A clergyman is a man in holy orders or one who has been ordained in accordance with the rules of his church or denomination.³¹

32. Minister.—A minister is one who acts as, or performs some of the functions of, a clergyman.³²

33. Rector or Pastor.—A rector or pastor is a clergyman who has charge of a parish.³³

²⁸Coleman v. O'Leary, 114 Ky., 388; 70 S. W., 1068.

²⁹McEntee v. Bonacum, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633.

³⁰American and English Encyclopedia of Law, "Parishoner."

³¹Ibid., "Minister"; 7 Cyc, 189, "Clergy."

³²Ibid.

³³Ibid.

34. Religion.—Religion is still further distinguished, but not very satisfactorily defined, for the reason that etymologists have not agreed upon the derivation of the word. When the matter was brought before our courts and it became necessary to give a definition, the highest court in our country gave the following: “The term ‘religion’ has reference to one’s views of his relations to his Creator, and to the obligations they impose of reverence for His being and character, and of obedience to His will. It is often confounded with *cultus* or form of worship of a particular sect, but it is distinguishable from the latter.”³⁴ One of our highest courts held that “religion,” as used in the trust provision in a will for the purchase and distribution of religious books or reading as they shall be deemed best, means “Christian.”³⁵ But the Supreme Court of another State held that “religion” is not equivalent to “Christian” religion, but means the religion of any class of men.³⁶ Judge Willis defines “religion” thus: “It is what a man honestly believes in and approves of and thinks it his duty to inculcate

³⁴Davies v. Beason, 133 U. S., 333; 33 L. Ed., 637.

³⁵Simpson v. Welcome, 72 Me., 496.

³⁶Board v. Minor, 23 Ohio St., 250.

on others whether with regard to this world or the next; a belief in any system of retribution by an overruling power. It must, I think, include the principle of gratitude to an active power who can confer blessings.”⁸⁷

⁸⁷Baxter v. Langley, 38 L. J., M. C., 1.

CHAPTER III

CONSTITUTIONAL LAW

35. *Religious Tests.*—The constitution of the United States provides that “no religious test shall ever be required as a qualification to any office or public trust under the United States.”¹

36. *Test Oath, Attainder.*—No test oath of any kind, whether religious or otherwise, can be required of a citizen of the United States. Therefore the test oath of Congress requiring an officer to swear that he never voluntarily bore arms against the United States, was held unconstitutional. Exclusion from any vocation on account of past conduct is punishment and contrary to the constitution on the subject of bills of attainder.² But there is a limitation to this rule to prevent the open violation of the laws of the United States or any State under the cloak of religion.³

37. *Establishment of Religion, Free Exercise.*—The first amendment to the United

¹Art. vi.

²Ex parte Garland, 4 Wallace, 333; 18 L. Ed., 366.

³Church of Latter-Day Saints v. U. S., 136 U. S., 1; 34 L. Ed., 478; 140 U. S., 665; 35 L. Ed., 592.

Church of Latter-Day Saints 38–39]

States constitution provides that “Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof.”

38. *Sovereignty, States, Bigamy.*—The courts have held that this provision applies to Congress only, and can not be construed to interfere with the sovereignty of the several States; that the constitutional guarantee of religious freedom was not intended to prohibit legislation against polygamy; and that section 5352 of the United States Revised Statutes against bigamy, is constitutional. Also, that on a trial for bigamy in Utah, a man who was living in polygamy was not competent to serve as a juror.⁴

39. *Church of the Latter-Day Saints.*—In 1851 the assembly of the so-called State of Deseret, which subsequently became the territory of Utah, incorporated “the Church of the Latter-Day Saints.” In 1887 Congress repealed the act of incorporation and abrogated the charter, which the Supreme Court held was within its plenary powers. The pretense of religious belief can not deprive Congress of the power to prohibit polygamy and all other open offenses against the enlightened sentiments of mankind.⁵

⁴Reynolds v. United States, 8 Otto, 145; 25 L. Ed., 244.

⁵Church of Latter-Day Saints v. U. S., 136 U. S., 1; 34 L. Ed., 478; 140 U. S., 665; 35 L. Ed., 592.

40. *Crime, Religion.*—The law prohibiting any person who is a polygamist or bigamist, or who teaches, advises, counsels, or encourages the same, from holding any office of honor, trust, or profit, is constitutional; and a crime is none the less so, nor less odious, because it is sanctioned by what any particular sect may designate as religion. A state has the right to legislate for the punishment of all acts inimical to the peace, good order, and morals of society.⁶

41. *Donation, Hostile, Religion.*—On the other hand the United States Supreme Court declared the legal right of donees of a college to make as a condition of the donation that all ecclesiastics, missionaries, and ministers of any sort, should be excluded from holding any station of duty in the college or even visiting the same. The condition being only negatively derogatory and hostile to the Christian religion, did not make the devise for the foundation of the college void.⁷

42. *Christian Scientist.*—A law requiring a person to be a physician to treat the sick, is constitutional; and the defense of a person who has no license to practise, that he is a Christian Scientist, is not good. Also,

⁶Davis v. Beason, 133 U. S., 333; 33 L. Ed.. 637.

⁷Fenelon v. Girard, 2 Howard, 127; 11 L. Ed., 205.

a parent must furnish a doctor for his sick child, notwithstanding that he believes in prayer cure.⁸

43. Protestant.—In the early days, under the constitution of the State, the courts of Massachusetts practically held that the Protestant religion was the religion of that State.⁹ Also, the constitution of New Hampshire referred to different Christians, and the court in construing the terms “Roman Catholic” and “Protestant,” held that any one who did not assent to the truth of Christianity as a distinct system of religion, could not be classed as either. The court stated that Mohammedans, Jews, pagans, and infidels, are neither “Catholics” nor “Protestants.” The term “Protestant,” as used in the constitution of New Hampshire, includes all Christians who deny the authority of the Pope of Rome. When the children of Protestant parents renounce that religion, and voluntarily accept another, they cease to be Protestants.¹⁰ At present under the constitution of New Hampshire, the legislature may authorize towns or parishes to

⁸State v. Marble, 72 Ohio St., 21; 73 N. E., 1063; State v. Chenoweth, 163 Ind., 91; 71 N. E., 197; People v. Reetz, 127 Mich., 87; 86 N. W., 396; 59 Cen. L. J., 202; 68 L. R. A., 432.

⁹Thaxter v. Jones, 4 Mass., 570.

¹⁰Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9.

provide for the support of Protestant ministers.¹¹

44. *Hospitals, Sisters, Appropriation.*—In 1864, Providence Hospital, of Washington, was incorporated by an act of Congress, for general hospital purposes. In 1897, \$30,000 was appropriated for the District of Columbia to put up two isolation buildings in connection with two hospitals in that city, to be operated as a part of such hospitals. Providence Hospital was selected as one, and because it was in charge of Sisters of the Roman Catholic Church, the right of Congress to make the appropriation was disputed. Among other things, Judge Peackham says: “Whether the individuals who compose the corporation under its charter happen to be all Roman Catholics, or all Methodists, or all Presbyterians, or Unitarians, or members of any other religious organization, or of no organization at all, is of not the slightest consequence with reference to the law of its corporation, nor can the individual beliefs upon religious matters of the various incorporators be inquired into.” The appropriation was “for two hospital buildings to be constructed in the discretion of the commissioners of the District of Columbia on the grounds of two hospitals

¹¹Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson.

and to be operated as a part of such hospitals."¹²

45. Constitution, Rights.—The provisions in the constitution do not in any way interfere with property rights obtained by a church organization prior to its adoption.¹³

46. Aid, Contracts.—Under the constitution of the United States, Congress cannot make appropriations for nor give aid to any denomination. Also, similar provisions are in many of the constitutions of the States. However, many cases arise out of contracts which border upon these various rules, and in some States the constitutional provision of the State is such that the State Legislature may legislate concerning religion and give certain aid and support thereto. Paying rent to a congregation for a school-room is not an appropriation or aid to a church contrary to the constitution.¹⁴

47. Protestant Teacher, Tax.—Formerly every parish in Massachusetts was obliged to elect and support a Protestant teacher, and might erect churches and parsonages. To provide the expenses thereof, a tax

¹²Bradford v. Roberts, 175 U. S., 291; 44 L. Ed., 168; 20 Sup. Ct. R., 121; Municipality of Ponce v. The Roman Catholic Apostolic Church, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737 (1908).

¹³Terrett v. Taylor, 9 Cranch, 43; 3 L. Ed., 650; Municipality, etc., v. Church, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737.

¹⁴Millard v. Board, 19 Ill., 48; Dorner v. Dist., 118 N. W., 353.

might be assessed upon the polls of the inhabitants.¹⁵ Until 1890 New Hampshire permitted a tax to be levied in towns for religious purposes. It is still legal under the New Hampshire constitution to tax the inhabitants for the purpose of supporting Protestant teachers, but not to support a teacher of any other denomination.¹⁶ A section of land in every township in Ohio was set apart for religious societies, in which they all shared equally.¹⁷ Vermont had a similar provision.¹⁸

48. *Office, God.*—The constitutions of Arkansas, Mississippi, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Texas, prohibit a man from holding office who denies the existence of a Supreme Being; and the constitutions of Delaware, Maryland, Kentucky, and Tennessee, make all clergymen ineligible to hold a civil office.¹⁹

49. *Religious Liberty, Bible, Religious Garb, Wages.*—The authorities are not uniform as to what constitutes a violation of religious liberty. The question of whether the reading of the Bible in the public schools is a violation of the constitution, is an open

¹⁵Ashby v. Wellington, 25 Mass., 524.

¹⁶Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson, p. 139; Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9.

¹⁷State v. Trustees, 11 Ohio, 24.

¹⁸First v. Leach, 35 Vt., 108.

¹⁹Federal and State Constitutions, Stimson, p. 139.

one in some States and in others the courts have passed upon it, some holding that it is a violation of the constitution,²⁰ and some holding that it is not.²¹ The weight of authority seems to permit the reading of the "King James" Bible,²² and where portions only are read, as in "reading books" prepared for school work, or where the children are not obliged to be present during the exercises, the cases seem to be unanimous that it is not a violation of the constitution.²³ In Pennsylvania the court held that while Sisters in their religious garb might be teachers in the public schools, they could not give instruction in the Catholic religion at the schoolhouse before or after school hours, or at any other time use the school building for religious purposes. Also, in Wisconsin the court decided that while a portion of a parochial school building might be leased for public school purposes and the Sisters be employed therein as teachers, religious exercises and instructions could not be given in

²⁰State v. District, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 20 Am. St. R., 41; 7 L. R. A., 330.

²¹Church v. Bullock, 100 S. W. (Tex.), 1025; Millard v. Board, 121 Ill., 297; 10 N. E., 669; Hackett v. Brooksville, 27 Ky. L., 1021; 87 S. W., 792; 69 L. R. A., 592; 61 C. L. J., 49.

²²Church v. Bullock, 100 S. W., 1025.

²³Moore v. Monroe, 64 Ia., 367; 20 N. W., 475; 66 L. R. A., 166; 52 Am. R., 444; Pfeiffer v. Board, 118 Mich., 560; 77 N. W., 250; 42 L. R. A., 536.

such leased premises.²⁴ In New York it was held not only that Sisters could not wear their religious garb or pray in school, but that they could not collect wages for teaching.²⁵

²⁴*Hysong v. Gallitzin Borough School*, 164 Pa. St., 629; 30 At., 482; 26 L. R. A., 203; *Dorner v. School District*, 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

²⁵*O'Connor v. Hendricks*, 96 N. Y. S., 161.

CHAPTER IV

STATUTORY LAW

50. *Wisconsin, Mississippi, New York.*

—The statutory law of the different States of the Union is so varied and the laws of one State are of so little interest to the people of another that it would be almost useless and beyond the boundaries of this work to give the substance of the various statutes. In some States there is a limitation upon the real estate that a church or charitable organization may hold, and in other States there is no limitation whatever. Wisconsin, perhaps, occupies the extreme of greatest liberality, by not only allowing full freedom in everything relating to religion and charity, but it further excepts from the limitation all rights of alienation of real estate granted or devised to a charitable association or to literary or charitable corporations organized under the law of the State. The State of Mississippi probably stands at the other extreme both in the narrowness of its constitution and statutory law, and prohibits any

devise or bequest of any personal property or real estate in favor of any religious or ecclesiastical corporation or any religious or ecclesiastical society. Neither does it exempt a clergyman, physician, or lawyer, from examination as a witness concerning information that he obtained in the performance of his functions or duties as such. Its judges, however, are more liberal than its legislators, and I know of no instance in which a clergyman, physician, or lawyer, as a witness, was sent to jail for contempt of court for not divulging information obtained in his professional capacity. Probably New York has the most complete code¹ relating to religious corporations.

51. *Real Estate, Parish, Diocese, Taxation.*—It is very important that a congregation about to purchase real estate should examine and understand the statutory law of the State governing the powers and authority of the Church as a civil organization. In some States there is no special law for incorporating religious societies; while in most States there are special provisions therefor. For this reason, I emphasize the fact that no parish or clergyman is justified in organizing a congregation or purchasing land without first knowing the law of that particular

¹Ch. 723, L. 1895.

State. But generally it is best that each congregation be incorporated and that its property be held in the name of the corporation, so that the debts of one corporation will not embarrass the diocese, and that bequests and gifts made to a church may be enforced in the courts. The proceedings to incorporate are fully stated in the statutes of each State. One of the things of the utmost importance is that any notice to be given must be given strictly as required by law.² Another is to incorporate in the way that avoids taxation.³

52. *Riot, Damages.*—Under a statute providing that a person whose property is destroyed by riot may bring suit against the county for damages, a corporation for religious purposes, as well as an individual, has a right of action.⁴

53. *Use, Change, Parsonage, Discipline, Doctrine, Curate.*—When a fee simple is acquired by a religious corporation, without restriction as to quantity, but limiting the purpose of its use, a subsequent Legislature, with the consent of the corporation, has power to change or abrogate altogether the restrictions as to the use of the land.⁵ And

²*West v. Otteson*, 80 Wis., 62; 49 N. W., 24; *Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 23 Ill., 456; 31 Ill., 25.

³*Gitzhoffen v. Sisters*, 88 Pac., 691; 32 Utah, 46; *Trustees v. B. P. O. E.*, 122 Wis., 452; 100 N. W., 837.

⁴*Hermits v. County*, 7 Pa. L. J., 124.

⁵*Trustees v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

the Legislature may empower the church corporation to convey a house devised to it for a parsonage with a condition that it be kept in repair, and invest the proceeds in other property to be held for the same purpose.⁶ A State legislature can not interfere in church discipline and doctrine, as by legislating what shall constitute a curate in the Catholic Church.⁷

⁶In re Van Horn, 18 R. I., 389.

⁷Wardens v. Blanc, 8 Rob. La., 51.

CHAPTER V

UNINCORPORATED CHURCH SOCIETIES

54. *Partners, Debt, Liability.*—Where several go into an undertaking without first being incorporated they are usually liable as partners, each one being responsible for the whole debt. In some States the same liability exists where an attempt has been made to incorporate, but there was a failure to comply fully with the law.¹ There is some authority freeing the individual members of a religious society from liability for the debts of such society,² and holding that an agent of such society could not bind the society in their associated capacity by a promissory note,³ but the rule is that the members of an unincorporated society who actively incur lawful debts or ratify them after their creation are personally liable. There are exceptions to this rule by statute or decisions

¹Rutherford v. Hill, 22 Or., 218; 29 Pac., 546; 17 L. R. A., 549; 56 Cen. L. J., 221; Wechselberg v. Flour, 64 F., 90.

²Jewett v. Thames Bank, 16 Conn., 511.

³Jeffs v. York, 10 Cushing, 392.

[55-57 *Unincorporated Church Societies*

in a few States.⁴ Also, the law of personal liability is settled in England.⁵

55. *Pastor, Salary.*—In a late case in Wisconsin where a pastor had a contract with his congregation as to his salary, after the clergyman's death his heirs recovered the unpaid part of his salary in an action against a few of the individual members of the congregation.⁶

56. *Building, Materials.*—The members of the building committee of an unincorporated church are liable for materials purchased by them for the church, notwithstanding that the seller charged the materials in the name of the church, and that at the time that the purchase was made, he was told that the money for payment was to be raised by subscription among the congregation.⁷

57. *Management, Disability.*—An unincorporated society is managed by those who are competent to transact their own business. Therefore, it would seem that members must be men over twenty-one years of age, and not under legal disability. The

⁴Allen v. M. E. Church, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255; Sawyer v. Methodist, 18 Vt., 405.

⁵Wise v. Perpetual Trustees, House of Lords, 57 C. L. J., 104.

⁶Sheehy v. Blake, 77 Wis., 394; 46 N. W., 537; 69 L. R. A., 255.

⁷Clark v. O'Rourke, 111 Mich., 108; 69 N. W., 147.

minor sons in a family who have continued their attendance at the religious services until of full age, are considered members.⁸

58. *Shakers, Sect, Catholic Church, Trustees, Funds.*—Although the sect called Shakers is not incorporated, yet it has been allowed to take and hold property for church purposes.⁹ In Massachusetts, by statute, a sect may take and hold property for religious purposes without incorporation.¹⁰ The Roman Catholic Church is a recognized public corporation by most nations, including the United States.¹¹ No individual member of any such body has any title to the lands it holds, but the lands are the property of the society in its aggregate capacity.¹² After property has been acquired, the trustees have no right to distribute it among the members, as such power could not be conferred upon them by a majority vote even when approved by an order of the court. The contributors did not intend their funds to be so disposed of, and if they failed to attain the use intended, they must be re-

⁸Bradford v. Cary, 5 Me., 339; Lynch v. Pfeiffer, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402; In re St. Luke's, 17 Philadelphia, 261.

⁹Addison v. Brock, 3 Me., 243.

¹⁰Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pickering, 172.

¹¹Municipality of Ponce v. Roman Catholic Church, 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737; 6 Cyc, 915.

¹²Ferraria v. Vasconcellos, 31 Ill., 25; Mason v. Muncaster, 9 Wheaton, 468; 6 L. Ed., 131.

[59–61 *Unincorporated Church Societies*

turned to the donors, and if not called for, would escheat to the state.¹³ Where an unincorporated society has purchased property and taken the title thereto in the name of one of its members, when it subsequently incorporates such member may be required to execute a conveyance to the corporation.¹⁴

59. *Contract, Binding.*—Persons forming a religious society may make a contract for the support of its minister by a majority vote.¹⁵ When such unincorporated society by a majority vote enters into a contract or compromises a suit, it is binding upon the minority.¹⁶

60. *Court, Trust.*—Any member of an unincorporated society may go into a court of equity on behalf of himself and others to enforce the execution of a trust in favor of the society.¹⁷

61. *Societies, Membership, Forfeiture.*—Voluntary religious societies when not restricted by their charters or articles of association, may make by-laws declaring what shall constitute membership and what shall

¹³Wheaton v. Gates, 18 N. Y., 395.

¹⁴South v. Yates, 1 Hoff. N. Y., 142; Miller v. Chittendon, 42 Ia., 252; Newmarket v. Smart, 45 N. H., 87; Evangelical Appeal, 35 Pa. St., 316.

¹⁵Congregational Society v. Swan, 2 Vt., 222.

¹⁶Horton v. Baptist Church, 34 Vt., 309.

¹⁷Associated Reform Church v. Theological Seminary, 4 N. J. Eq., 77.

operate as a forfeiture thereof, applicable to existing as well as to future members. Where money is voted to be raised by an assessment to be made at a subsequent period, a person who was a member of the religious society at the time that such vote was passed, but withdraws before the time of assessment, is not liable to taxation.¹⁸

¹⁸Taylor v. Edison, 4 Cushing, 522.

CHAPTER VI

INCORPORATED RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES

62. *Special Law, General Laws.*—In most of the States there is a special law under which congregations may be incorporated. New York is a good example.¹ Where such law does not exist, the congregation may be incorporated under the general laws. For business reasons each congregation should be incorporated.²

63. *Officers, Discipline, Property.*—When a church society incorporates it becomes a private corporation, and the officers are bound to manage the property in the most upright and careful manner according to the discipline of the church.³ When a parish incorporates, the title to the parish property vests in the corporation, to which trustees may be compelled to convey it.⁴

64. *Incorporation, Evidence.*—The certificate of incorporation or charter of a religious society or a certified copy thereof

¹Laws of 1895, ch. 723; Religious Corporations, Cummings and Gilbert.

²Heiss v. Vosburg, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 463.

³Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

⁴Christian C. v. C., 219 Ill., 503; 76 N. E., 703.

from the public record, is the proper evidence thereof.⁵ Secondary evidence and evidence *aliunde* may be competent in some forums.⁶ In most States if incorporation is alleged in the complaint, it need not be proved unless denied by an affidavit or a verified answer.

65. Congregation, Members.—The act of incorporation applies only to the particular congregation petitioning for it and does not extend to other churches, even though they are a subsequent growth within the same territory.⁷ Incorporation once established is presumed to continue.⁸ When a new religious society is formed and incorporated, consisting of individuals from existing parishes, the members of the new society from the time of its incorporation cease to be members of the respective parishes to which they had belonged.⁹

66. Temporal Affairs, Management.—A majority of a religious corporation at a regularly called meeting may, by a vote taken, bind the minority in all temporal affairs.¹⁰ The character of membership in the religious corporation may be very different from

⁵Jackson v. Legate, 9 Wendell, N. Y., 377.

⁶10 Cyc., 235-244.

⁷Atty-Gen. v. Dutch, 36 N. Y., 452.

⁸Methodist v. Pickett, 23 Barber, 436.

⁹Sutton v. Cole, 8 Mass., 96.

¹⁰Miller v. English, 21 N. J. L., 317.

[67-69 *Incorporated Religious Societies*

that of membership in the church.¹¹ The fact that a member has been declared out of the church by an ecclesiastical tribunal, may not affect his rights in the management of the temporal concerns of the corporation.¹²

67. *Corporators, Change.*—In isolated cases here and there it has been held that a majority of the corporators of a religious society has the right to change the form of church government, as from the Congregational Church to an organization in connection with the Presbyterian Church.¹³ But it is a general rule that a majority of the congregation can act only consistently with the particular and general laws of the church organization, but not in violation of them.¹⁴

68. *Constitution, Subsequent Laws.*—An ecclesiastical society formed before the adoption of the state constitution is not by that constitution and subsequent laws concerning religious societies divested of its legal character.¹⁵

69. *Name, Change.*—The name of an ecclesiastical corporation is arbitrary and a

¹¹Enos v. Church, 187 Mass., 40; 72 N. E., 253.

¹²Baptist v. Wetherell, 3 Paige, N. Y., 296; In re Williams, 105 N. Y. S., 1105; Contra: First R. P. Ch. v. Bowden, 10 Abb., N. C., 1.

¹³Bellports v. Tooker, 29 Barber, N. Y., 256.

¹⁴Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

¹⁵Atwater v. Woodbridge, 6 Conn., 223.

Control, Secede, Vested Rights 70-72]

change or alteration in its name does not affect its identity.¹⁶ A charter will not be granted to a church with a name so like another church in the same State, that one may be taken for the other.¹⁷

70. Church, Regular.—In church organizations those who adhere to the regular order of the church, legal and general, though a minority, are the true congregation and constitute the corporation if incorporated.¹⁸

71. Notice, Legal.—All the proceedings of a corporation, including notice, must be in accordance with the constitution and by-laws, and no business transacted contrary thereto is legal.¹⁹

72. Control, Secede, Vested Rights.—The officers of a church corporation have control of the business management for all civil purposes, excepting as otherwise provided by the articles of organization, charter, or by-laws of the corporation. However, the by-laws must not contravene the laws of the State.²⁰ A charter was refused in Pennsylvania which provided that the

¹⁶Wardens v. Hall, 22 Conn., 125.

¹⁷Beach, Private Corporations, vol. i, p. 608.

¹⁸Free Ch. of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; Winnebrenner v. Colder, 43 Pa. St., 244.

¹⁹Rules of Order, Scanlan, c. iii.

²⁰Christ's Ev. L. C., 5 Pa. Co. Court, 121.

[73 *Incorporated Religious Societies*

congregation might, by a majority vote, dissolve or secede from the central body and divide the property.²¹ A charter of incorporation may be amended in harmony with the principles, discipline, and objects of the church, but not otherwise.²² The fact that incorporation of a church confers certain rights and privileges under the charter, such charter being accepted, does not give the church corporation any vested rights.²³

73. *Consolidation, Control, Dissolution.*—So far as the State law is concerned, two different denominations may form one corporation;²⁴ or two or more congregations of the same organization may form one corporation.²⁵ Where such consolidation is attempted, the new organization must have control of all the property.²⁶ So long as different congregations attempting to consolidate retain their respective identities, they do not form a single corporation.²⁷ It is a general rule that a corporation may be dissolved by taking the steps required by law. As there are various statutory provisions in the

²¹In re Zion, 8 Kulp. Pa., 239.

²²In re Hebron, 9 Phil., 609.

²³U. S. V. Church, 5 Utah, 361, 394, and 538; 15 Pac., 473; 16 Pac., 723; 18 Pac., 35.

²⁴Neil v. Vestry, 8 Gill., 116.

²⁵Madison v. Baptist, 26 N. Y., 570; Stokes v. Phelps, 47 Hun., 570.

²⁶German, etc., 9 Pa. Co. C., 12.

²⁷Evenson v. Ellingson, 72 Wis., 242; 39 N. W., 330.

different States, each case had best be attended to by an attorney. In some States there is a provision that where a corporation fails to carry out its functions for a stated time, it thereby becomes dissolved. The omission of a parish for one year to elect officers, does not necessarily operate as a dissolution under such statute. In case of dissolution under a statute of that kind, the property of the church is not forfeited to the State.²⁸

74. *Debt, Limited.*—The amount of debt which the trustees of a religious society may be authorized to create, may be limited by its constitution.²⁹

75. *Conditions, Effect.*—Where \$1,000 was given defendants to erect and maintain forever a Lutheran church and prohibiting the grantee from alienating or disposing of or otherwise changing or encumbering the land by deed, a mortgage given to secure a legitimate debt was held valid, as the legal title was in the corporation and a court of equity could not refuse to enforce the mortgage for the payment of an honest debt under color of protecting a charitable use.³⁰ But property given a congregation for the

²⁸Toby v. Wareham, 54 Mass., 440.

²⁹Weber v. Zimmerman, 22 Md., 156; Wyncoop v. Cong., 10 La., 185.

³⁰Magie v. German, 13 N. J. Eq., 77.

[76] *Incorporated Religious Societies*

maintenance of a church that becomes dissolved, reverts to the heirs as a resulting trust.³¹ A corporation that has been authorized to purchase land may execute a mortgage for the purchase money or a part of it without further authority.³² Where by an ancient agreement a meeting-house was to remain in a particular place, a vote of the congregation will not justify pulling it down, and an action of trespass will lie for razing it and damages will be given for the value of the building.³³

76. *Suits, Parties.*—When a church is incorporated, it should be sued in its corporate name; but when the bishop of the Catholic church holds the legal title to the land in litigation, he should be made a party.³⁴ And if there are two sets of officers contending for control, service of the papers upon the intruders may not be sufficient. The safer practice is to serve upon both.³⁵ A suit by the trustees of a religious society to restrain other parties claiming to be trustees from interfering in the management and control of the society property, is properly

³¹*Esterbrook v. Tillinghast*, 71 Mass., 17.

³²*South v. Clapp*, 18 Barber, N. Y., 35.

³³*Tilden v. Metcalf*, 2 Day, Conn., 259; *Heiss v. Vosburg*, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 518.

³⁴*Keller v. Tracy*, 11 Ia., 530.

³⁵*Verrian v. Methodist*, 44 Abbott Pr., 424.

brought in the corporate name of the trustees and not in the name of the State.³⁶

77. *Incorporation, Sufficient.*—Where the articles of incorporation were drawn and signed in the form required by law, excepting as to the acknowledgment, and were recorded, and the corporation organized in good faith, it became a *de facto* corporation and was sufficient to entitle it to sue to prevent certain members from perverting the use of its property.³⁷

78. *Dissolution, Fund.*—The corporation of a congregation can not by seceding and a majority vote dissolve the corporation where it is a part of a superior body.³⁸ But the courts have plenary powers over corporations under the United States jurisdiction, such as territories, and may dissolve a corporation.³⁹ The fact that the dissolution is contrary to, or authorized by church discipline, makes no difference as to granting the dissolution, as such discipline can not supersede the state law.⁴⁰ On dissolution of a religious corporation, the surplus fund derived from a legacy should be disposed of in the manner the court believes to be most in

³⁶Trustees v. Hoessli, 13 Wis., 348.

³⁷Franke v. Mann, 106 Wis., 118; 81 N. W., 1014.

³⁸Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

³⁹Mormon v. United States, 136 U. S., 1; 33 L. Ed., 639.

⁴⁰In re Methodist, 67 Hun., 86.

[79–80 *Incorporated Religious Societies*

harmony with the will of the contributors to the fund, could they have foreseen the event.⁴¹

79. *Reorganization.*—A church corporation may reorganize and be reinstated into all rights that it formerly had.⁴² The steps to be taken to reorganize are usually provided by statute and should be closely followed. Upon the reorganization, the old corporation becomes terminated.⁴³

80. *Meetings, Majority, Quorum.*—In corporate meetings, meetings of boards, and meetings of committees duly called, a majority vote of those present determines the action of the body. If the membership is indefinite, those who attend such meeting constitute a quorum; but if the membership is definite, it requires a majority of the voting members to constitute a quorum, unless the law of the State or the constitution (articles of organization) or by-laws provide a different number.⁴⁴

⁴¹In re Union, 6 Abb., N. C., 398.

⁴²First v. Brownell, 5 Hun., 464.

⁴³Evenson v. Ellingson, 72 Wis., 242; 39 N. W., 330.

⁴⁴Rules of Order, Scanlan, 20; Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 328; Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

CHAPTER VII

SUPERIOR AUTHORITY

81. *Protestant, Ministers, Bishop.*—In most church organizations the authority is divided into superior and inferior. In countries where there is an established Protestant church, the superior authority is first in the king and queen and secondly in the bishops. The inferior authority is in the ministers and secular officers of the church. Where there is no established church, the synod or bishop is the superior authority. Thus decisions of our courts usually apply to all churches alike.

82. *Roman Catholic Church, Pope, Bishops, Delegated.*—In the Roman Catholic Church the superior authority is first in the Pope and secondly in the other bishops. This superior authority is graded and some of it may be delegated, as in case of a Papal delegate. But the general rule that delegated authority can not be again delegated by the delegate without special authority applies to church matters.

83. *Bishop, Discipline, Clergy.*—Within his diocese the bishop is the executive officer, the legislature, and the judiciary; but he is subject to the superior authority of the Church. The bishop may make laws for his diocese, subject to the limitation of the general doctrine and discipline of the Church. He has original jurisdiction of all causes arising in his diocese, and may decide them in the first instance and inflict such penalties, suspension, or excommunication, in accordance with the canons of the Church, as he deems fit. The clergy are subject to his orders and discipline according to the canon law. However, without special contract, the bishop is not civilly liable for the salary of a priest under him, either while he is actually in the line of his assigned duties or while waiting to be assigned.¹

84. *Local, Secular Matters.*—There is still another division of superior and inferior authority: the local corporation or congregation has nothing whatever to do with the doctrinal or disciplinary functions of the Church; but has only such powers and authority with regard to secular matters as is provided by the laws of the State or conferred by the articles of organization,

¹Rose v. Vertin, 46 Mich., 457; 9 N. W., 491; Tuigg v. Sheehan, 101 Pa. St., 363.

charter, and by-laws. Also, unless there is some other rule to the contrary, only the male members who are over twenty-one years of age, have a voice and vote in such corporation.²

85. *Unincorporated, Authority.*—When a church is not incorporated, all its elections and proceedings, so far as they are not contrary to the laws of the State, must be in accordance with the rules and regulations of the Church; and the rule that the inferior authority must give way to the superior authority in all matters within the limitations of the constitution and laws of the organization, prevails.³ However, courts are not always clear on the last part of this rule.⁴

86. *Tribunal, Action, Appeal.*—When any question arises and is being adjudicated in the tribunal of the church organization, either as an original action or on appeal, the State court will not interfere so long as the proceedings are in accordance with the rules and regulations of the church, unless some vested right to property is in question or

²Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., "Religious Societies."

³Den. v. Bolton, 12 N. J. L., 206.

⁴Bonacum v. Murphy, 65 Neb., 831, and 71 Neb., 463; 98 N. W., 1030; 102 N. W., 267, and 104 N. W., 180.

some one's right as a citizen of the State or of the United States is being infringed.⁵

87. *Spiritual Authority, Excommunication.*—Neither the Pope nor the bishop has any but spiritual authority within the State.⁶ The law of this country considers excommunication as expelling from membership; but does not tolerate interference with civil or property rights of citizens. Therefore, major excommunication *non tolerati*, is unlawful in the United States.⁷ However, a bishop is not liable for any expression of his opinion as to the extent of his episcopal authority nor for any act of omission in the exercise of his spiritual functions.⁸ The civil courts will not go behind a church authority to inquire as to excommunication, but may examine as to the competency of the tribunal according to the laws of the denomination.⁹

88. *Constitution, Limited, Decisions.*—A written constitution is not necessary to prove the connection between a subordinate and superior ecclesiastical body; but it will be inferred from the circumstances of the

⁵Bonacum v. Murphy, 71 Neb., 463; 104 N. W., 180; Bowden v. MacLeod, 1 Edw., N. Y., 588.

⁶Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., La., 62.

⁷Fitzgerald v. Robinson, 112 Mass., 371; Grosvenor v. United States, 118 Mass., 78; Post, 132.

⁸Wardens v. Blanc, 8 Rob., La., 51.

⁹Bowldin v. Alexander, 82 U. S., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69.

case.¹⁰ The superior may dissolve or reorganize an inferior body as a congregation.¹¹ In fact the superior authority, in religious matters, is plenary, excepting as limited by the laws of the State and the constitution of the Church.¹² The decisions of the ecclesiastical tribunals in all cases on doctrine, order, and discipline, are conclusive in the state courts.¹³

¹⁰Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

¹¹Appeal of McAuley, 77 Pa., 397.

¹²Smith v. Swormstedt, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

¹³Skilton v. Webster, Bright, Pa., 203; Mt. Helena Bp. Ch., 79 Miss., 488; 30 So. Rep., 714.

CHAPTER VIII

INFERIOR AUTHORITY

89. *Priesthood, Discipline.*—The inferior authority in the Church may be said to be in the priesthood, whose rights and duties are fixed by the canon law, but who are still further subject to the reasonable diocesan rules made by the bishop. The disciplinary relation of a priest to his bishop is substantially the same as that of a captain to his colonel, and implicit obedience in accordance with the discipline of the Church may be strictly enforced by the bishop in so far as it relates to ecclesiastical matters, including doctrine and discipline, in which the priest can not resort to the courts of the State, but must submit to the tribunals of the church.¹

90. *Congregation, Insubordinate, Discipline.*—The male members of a congregation are invested with no visitorial or controlling power, but only such authority as is given under the laws of incorporation.²

¹Smith v. Swormstedt, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

²Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323; Papalio v. Manusos, 113 Ill. App., 316.

Where an inferior organization, as a congregation, refuses to receive a clergyman appointed by the bishop, it is an act of insubordination to the ecclesiastical authority of the Church and in violation of its discipline, which authorizes the issuing of a peremptory mandamus commanding them to admit the clergyman.³

91. *Pastor, Parish, Relation.*—When a clergyman's connection with a church had been duly dissolved, he ceased to be pastor of the church and an arrangement with the parish to retain his relation as pastor of such church was nugatory and void.⁴

92. *Clergymen, Citizens.*—Clergymen residing in an incorporated town are not exempt from the performance of any duties required of citizens, unless such exemption is given by statute.⁵

93. *Doctrine and Discipline, Authority.*—In all matters concerning doctrine and discipline of the Church, the inferior authority, such as ministers, priests, and deacons, as well as the congregation, must submit to the decision of the higher authority, whether bishop, synod, or council.⁶

³People v. Steele, 2 Barber, 397.

⁴Stebbins v. Jennings, 10 Pickering, 172.

⁵Elizabeth City v. Kennedy, Bush, 44, N. C. Law, 89.

⁶Diffendorf v. Reformed Church, 20 Johns., N. Y., 12.

94. *Sect, Suit, Property.*—A number of people formed a congregation and became incorporated in 1810, the members being mostly of Presbyterian extraction. This independent congregation bought and paid for property, the title vesting in the corporation. In 1811 the congregation passed resolutions unanimously that it “would be imprudent and unscriptural” to establish a new religious sect, and voted to join the First Reformed Dutch Church, which had an organization of inferior and superior authority. The congregation was received into and became a part of the general organization, and remained so until 1860, when a majority of the congregation voted to employ a Methodist minister, and when his name was submitted to the superior authority, the “classis,” he was rejected as not belonging to the church. Then by a majority vote, the congregation seceded and assumed its first name, and thereafter brought suit for the church property. The court held that by joining the First Reformed Dutch Church, the title of the property vested in the congregation of that church as represented by its corporation, and that when the majority seceded and left the church, they had no right nor title to any of the property. And the court laid

down the general rule that a majority of a church congregation may direct and control any church matters consistently with the particular and general laws of the organization or denomination to which it belongs, but not in violation of them.⁷

95. Priest, Salary.—The fact that a bishop who holds the title to all the diocesan property in his own name in trust appoints a priest to the parish or as chaplain to a hospital, does not give the priest a right of action against the bishop personally for his salary. The relation of bishop and priest is not that of employer and employe, but is that of ecclesiastical superior and inferior.⁸

96. Curate, Induction, Rector.—The *jus patronatus* of the Spanish law has been abrogated in Louisiana. The wardens of the church can not compel a bishop to institute a curate of their appointment, nor is he in any sense subordinate in his clerical functions to the wardens of any church within his diocese.⁹ In the absence of a positive rule of the ecclesiastical body, no ceremony of induction is necessary for the rector of a parish.¹⁰ A clergyman appointed “permanently” to a rectorship holds it for an indefi-

⁷*Sutton v. Trustees*, 42 Pa., 503.

⁸*Baxter v. McDonald*, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667.

⁹*Wardens v. Blanc*, 8 Rob., 51.

¹⁰*Young v. Ransom*, 31 Barb., 49.

nite period during the pleasure of the contracting parties, and either of the contracting parties may give the other notice of termination, and with the concurrence of the higher ecclesiastical authority of the diocese, a change may be made.¹¹ It is doubtful, however, whether in most States a permanent appointment would not be construed as a contract for life, determinable only for good cause.¹²

97. *Controversy, Tribunal, Decision.*—When the clergyman and his parishioners submit a controversy to an ecclesiastical tribunal, the decision, if not impeached for good cause, is justification in the party conforming to it.¹³ And a minister who submits to a church tribunal and is ousted after fair hearing and trial, can not obtain a writ of mandamus from the civil court to compel his reinstatement.¹⁴ Also, after a minister has been dismissed in due manner by the tribunal of his denomination, the civil court will enjoin him from usurping his office.¹⁵

98. *Priest, Dwelling, Servant.*—A Catholic priest in charge of a congregation at the will of the bishop and occupying a dwell-

¹¹*Perry v. Wheeler*, 75 Ky., 541.

¹²*Sheldon v. Easton*, 4 Mass., 281; *Congregation v. Peres*, 42 Tenn., 620; *Thompson v. Catholic*, 22 Mass., 469.

¹³*Proprietors v. Proprietors*, 48 Mass., 496.

¹⁴*Dempsey v. North*, 98 Mich., 444; 57 N. W., 267.

¹⁵*Hackett v. Mt. Pleasant*, 46 Ark., 291.

ing-house belonging to the church, is a servant and not a tenant, and his right to occupancy ceases with his services.¹⁶ The law is different with regard to a Methodist minister who is in charge of his parish by an annual conference and can not be ejected by the congregation or bishop until the next conference, as he has possession of the church property without superior authority.¹⁷

99. *Injunction, Bishop, Priest, Trial.*—On application for an injunction to restrain the bishop from passing a sentence against a priest, the only ground on which a court can exercise jurisdiction is that the threatened action of the bishop will affect the civil rights of the priest.¹⁸ A bishop can not remove a priest without an accusation, hearing, or trial, and forbid him to exercise any priestly function where such removal would cut off the priest's income and destroy his means of living in his vocation.¹⁹ However, in the same case it was held that a complaint stating that the bishop failed and neglected to assign the plaintiff to the exercise of his office of priest in said diocese to the plain-

¹⁶Chatard v. O'Donovan, 80 Ind., 20.

¹⁷Brestor v. Burr, 120 N. Y., 427; 8 L. R. A., 710; 24 N. E., 937.

¹⁸Walker v. Wainwright, 16 Barb., 486.

¹⁹O'Hara v. Stack, 90 Pa., 477.

[100–102 *Inferior Authority*

tiff's damage, etc., failed to show that any right of property or civil right was involved and the priest was non-suited, while in the former case an injunction was issued against the bishop.²⁰

100. *Confession, Privacy, Authority.*—A Catholic priest, although about to administer an office of his religion to a sick person at the latter's request, has no legal authority, by virtue of his priestly character, to forcibly remove from the room a person lawfully there.²¹

101. *Debts, Permission, Presumed.*—Notwithstanding a rule or ecclesiastical law of the church that a pastor shall not contract debts in the name or for the sake of the church without the written permission of the bishop, such written permission is not evidence that debts contracted under it are the legal debts of the bishop. The authority which bishops delegate to priests is under the ecclesiastical law and *prima facie* ecclesiastical authority, and must be presumed to be so in the absence of all evidence to the contrary.²²

102. *Official Acts, Subscriptions.*—The official acts of a minister coming in question incidentally, unless contrary to the statute,

²⁰Stack v. O'Hara, 98 Pa. St., 213.

²¹Cooper v. McKenna, 104 Mass., 284.

²²Leahy v. Williams, 141 Mass., 345.

are as valid as the official acts of any other officer.²³ A clergyman who was engaged to conduct dedication services and was requested by the officers of the local corporation to solicit subscriptions for paying off the indebtedness of the church, but was not appointed agent to receive such subscriptions, had no authority to accept a subscription for the corporation.²⁴

103. Exemptions, Clergy.—The exemptions given ministers by the statutes of some States are liberally construed.²⁵ Without any statutory exemption, the clergy are liable for all duties required of other citizens.²⁶

104. Minister, Contributions, Deposed.—No religious teacher or minister can be enjoined from receiving voluntary contributions, although he has been deposed by some ecclesiastical tribunal.²⁷

105. Fees, Usages, Excess.—The fees of a priest of the Catholic Church are regulated by the laws and usages of that Church, and where in this country the pew rent and collections go for the support of the priest and the current church expenses, a priest is

²³State v. Winkle, 14 N. H., 480.

²⁴Methodist v. Sherman, 36 Wis., 404.

²⁵Baldwin v. McKlinch, 1 Me., 102.

²⁶Elizabeth City v. Kennedy, 44 N. C., 89.

²⁷Calkins v. Cheney, 92 Ill., 463.

[106-109 *Inferior Authority*

not accountable for the excess of such collections over these expenditures.²⁸

106. *Salary, Fees.*—Under the act of March, 1814, incorporating a congregation, the congregation, being the legal owners and temporal administrators of the property which it was authorized to hold, had the exclusive power to fix the salary of the parish priest or the tariff of fees for marriages, burial, etc. No such power could be exercised under that act by the Pope or any bishop.²⁹

107. *Clergyman, Salary.*—Where a clergyman agreed with a congregation that the salary should be what could be raised by subscription, the congregation was bound to use due diligence in procuring subscriptions, and as it did so, that was all that the clergyman could recover.³⁰

108. *Curate, Services.*—In an action by a curate against a religious corporation for personal services, the court will not inquire into the spiritual relations existing between the parties, but will examine their legal rights only.³¹

109. *Minister, Dismissal, Money Advanced.*—After a parish has voted to dis-

²⁸St. Patrick's v. Daly, 116 Ill, 76; 4 N. E., 241.

²⁹Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., La., 62.

³⁰Meyer v. Baptist, 38 Vt., 614.

³¹Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., 62.

miss the minister, it is not competent to prove irregular conduct or immorality in answer to his claim for salary, without alleging it in the vote of dismissal.³² In Illinois it was held that a priest who advanced money from his private resources for improving church property, had an equitable lien upon the property for all the money advanced, with legal interest.³³ But in Pennsylvania, where a priest under the direction of the bishop built a church in his parish for mission purposes, and in doing so expended some of his own money, it was held that in the absence of proof of any rule or custom of the Catholic Church making the payment of such expenses obligatory on the parish, that he could not recover the money so expended from his congregation.³⁴

³²*Whittmore v. Fourth*, 68 Mass., 306.

³³*St. Patrick's v. Daly*, 4 N. E., 241; 116 Ill., 76.

³⁴*Tuigg v. Treacy*, 104 Pa., 493.

CHAPTER IX

MEMBERSHIP

110. *Business, Religious Membership.*—Unless there is some other law or rule to the contrary, the male members of the congregation over twenty-one years of age constitute the business membership of a religious society.¹ But the question of membership of religious societies or congregations is left to be determined by the rules of the religious denomination to which they belong.² And where a condition of membership is that the person must contribute to the support of the church and be a communicant, if he is not a communicant he is not entitled to vote.³

111. *Regular, Doctrines, Support.*—The ones who adhere and submit to the regular order and doctrines of the church, although a minority, constitute the true congregation.⁴ At least two things must concur to qualify a person as a voter: first, stated at-

¹Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

²Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276, 278; Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

³Weckerly v. Geyer, 11 Ser. R. Pa., 35.

⁴Weinbrenner v. Colder, 43 Pa. St., 244.

tendance at divine worship in the congregation; and, second, contribution to the support of the church.⁵ The list of members kept by the clerk or secretary of the congregation is evidence of membership.⁶ A person who denies any part of the system of theology received and taught by the denomination is not a member of the church.⁷

112. *Factions, Authority.*—Where two factions of a church, each claiming to be the church, try members of the other faction, a court may determine which of the factions is the authorized authority or that the action taken by either or both of them is nugatory for want of authority.⁸

113. *Faith, Burial.*—Whether a person died in the faith of the Roman Catholic Church so as to be entitled to burial in its cemetery, is not a question within the jurisdiction of civil courts, but must be decided by the ecclesiastical authorities.⁹

114. *Rules, Membership.*—Every denomination has the right to prescribe by rules, its constitution, or its by-laws, the conditions of membership; and any one who

⁵People v. Tuthil, 31 N. Y., 550.

⁶Price v. Lyon, 14 Conn., 280.

⁷Suter v. Spangler, 4 Phil., 331.

⁸Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 36; 32 L. R. A., 836; 33 N. E., 777.

⁹McGuire v. Trustees, 54 Hun., 207.

will not subscribe to and practise the doctrines of the denomination is not a member.¹⁰

115. *Minor.*—Where the legal members of a society that is incorporated consist of male members of the church of full age, when minor sons become of age, they become legal members of the corporation, provided they remain in the church.¹¹

116. *Officers, Non-Members.*—It has been held that a person may be an officer or member of the church corporation or its temporal concerns without being a member of the denomination.¹²

117. *Debts, Unincorporated Parish.*—In Connecticut members of an ecclesiastical society formed by voluntary association under the statutes of the State are not individually liable for the debts of such society.¹³ But where there is no statute on the subject, the members of an unincorporated parish are liable for lawful debts contracted or ratified by them, and their property may be levied on for such debts

¹⁰Church v. Halverson, 42 Minn., 503; 44 N. W., 563; Day v. Bolton, 12 N. J. L., 206; Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

¹¹Osgood v. Bradley, 7 Me., 411.

¹²Baptist v. Witherell, 24 Am. Dec., 223; 3 The Catholic Encyclopedia, 755; Contra: First R. P. Ch. v. Bowden, 10 Abb., N. C., 1. See post 134, 156.

¹³Jewett v. Thames, 16 Conn., 511.

Lay Members, Appointed 118-121]

incurred or judgments rendered while they are members of the society.¹⁴ The members of an unincorporated parish may be sued to recover the salary of a deceased pastor up to the time of his death.¹⁵

118. *Execution, Property.*—While an execution against a territorial parish may be levied on the property of a member of the parish, it can not be levied on property of a person who ceased to be a member before the levy.¹⁶

119. *Incorporated, Subscriptions.*—The members of an incorporated poll parish are not individually liable on a judgment and execution against the corporation, excepting on the unpaid subscriptions.¹⁷

120. *Expelled, Merits.*—Mandamus can not be resorted to to restore a member regularly expelled from his church, as a court will not inquire into the merits of the case.¹⁸

121. *Lay Members, Appointed.*—Where the statute provides that two lay members of the corporation of a Catholic parish shall

¹⁴Chick v. Trevett, 20 Me., 462; Allen v. M. E. Church, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255.

¹⁵Sheehy v. Blake, 72 Wis., 411; 39 N. W., 479; 9 L. R. A., 564.

¹⁶Chase v. Merrimac, 34 Mass., 564; Bigelow v. Congregation, 15 Vt., 370.

¹⁷Richardson v. Butterfield, 60 Mass., 191.

¹⁸State v. Hebrew, 31 La. Ann., 205; 33 Am. Rep., 217; Grosvenor v. United States, 118 Mass., 78; Watson v. Garbin, 54 Mo., 358.

be appointed annually "by the committee of the congregation," the members of the congregation have no right to elect said two members, and those appointed in the proper manner are lawful officers.¹⁹

¹⁹State v. Getty, 69 Conn., 286; 37 At., 188.

CHAPTER X

HERESY AND SECESSION

122. *Mother Church, Control.*—A majority of the members of a congregation can not by their vote leave the church and transfer the property of the congregation to another church so long as any portion of the congregation remains faithful to the mother church of which such congregation forms a part. Such minority shall retain control of the property.¹

123. *Seceders, Funds.*—Nor can seceders from a religious denomination retain the funds in their hands as trustees on the ground that they were members of the society when the funds accrued.² The title to church property in a divided congregation is in that part of the congregation which is acting in harmony with its own law; and the ecclesiastical laws and principles which were accepted among them before the dispute began are the standards for determining which party is right.³

¹Free Church of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; Fuchs v. Meisel, 102 Mich., 357; 32 L. R. A., 92; 60 N. W., 773.

²Methodist v. Wood, 5 Ohio, 12.

³McGinnis v. Watson, 41 Pa. St., 9.

124. *Society, Foreign Language, Independent.*—The formation of a society distinct from the rest of the congregation for the purpose of instruction in a portion of the doctrine of the same church in a foreign language is not a separation from the congregation, although it has its own minister and officers.⁴ Where an independent congregation of one denomination votes unanimously to go over to another denomination, and the title to the church property is in the parish corporation, the seceders take with them the church property.⁵

125. *Subordinate, Incorporated.*—A religious society subordinate to church judicatures, which declares itself independent and becomes incorporated under the general law of the state and subsequently purchases land and takes title in the name of the corporation, holds such land independently of such church judicatures.⁶

126. *“Church,” Seceders, Debt.*—Where a religious society amended its constitution as provided therein, those who adhered to the amended constitution constituted the “church,” and those who refused to do so

⁴German v. Seibert, 3 Pa. St., 282.

⁵Sutter v. First, 42 Pa. St., 503.

⁶Miller v. Gable, 2 Den., N. Y., 492; Eis v. Croze, 149 Mich., 62; 112 N. W., 943; Dressen v. Brameier, 56 Ia., 756; 9 N. W., 193; Amish v. Gelhaus, 71 Ia., 170; 32 N. W., 318.

were seceders.⁷ After seceding, a member of a parish is liable for a debt existing at the time of his secession.⁸

127. *Bible, Constitution, Withdrawal.*—A religious organization that takes the Bible as its constitution can not declare a member a seceder who interprets it contrary to the Augsburg Confession of the denomination.⁹ What amounts to a voluntary withdrawal of members from a religious association, is a question of law.¹⁰

128. *Majority, Obligation.*—The fact that a majority of the members of a religious corporation secede therefrom by a vote, does not affect its obligation entered into prior thereto.¹¹ Two factions of a church separating and keeping up different organizations may both still retain their membership in the denomination.¹²

129. *Division, Funds.*—Where there is a division in a denomination by the secession of a part of the members from the mother church, the Legislature has no authority to divide the funds and give a part to the seceding division.¹³

⁷Lamm v. Cain, 129 Ind., 486; 14 L. R. A., 518.

⁸Fernald v. Lewis, 6 Me., 264.

⁹Trustees v. Henschell, 48 Minn., 494; 51 N. W., 477.

¹⁰Perry v. Tupper, 74 N. C., 722.

¹¹Wanner v. Emanuel, 174 Pa., 466.

¹²West v. Ottesen, 80 Wis., 62; 49 N. W., 24.

¹³Second v. First, 23 Conn., 255.

130. *Methodist, Slaveholding, Non-Slaveholding, Quarrel, Schism, Secession.*—The division of the Methodist church into distinct organizations of slaveholding and non-slaveholding States, was not a secession and neither division lost its interest in the common property.¹⁴ A quarrel in a congregation growing out of an illegal election followed by the majority excluding the minority from the church, is not a schism, and is no ground for a division of the church property.¹⁵ The secession of a whole congregation does not carry with it the church property; and those who are left and adhere to the mother church retain control of the property.¹⁶ When the seceders from one church join another, they forfeit all claim to any interest held by the former and lose identity with it.¹⁷

¹⁴Smith v. Swormstedt, 57 U. S., 288; 14 L. Ed., 942.

¹⁵Nelson v. Benson, 69 Ill., 27; Brown v. Porter, 10 Mass., 93.

¹⁶Page v. Crosby, 41 Mass., 211.

¹⁷Harper v. Straws, 53 Ky., 48; Hale v. Everett, 53 N. H., 9; Wiswell v. First, 14 Ohio St., 31; Reorganized v. Church, 60 Fed., 937; 32 L. R. A., 838; Fernstler v. Seibert, 114 Pa., 196; 6 At., 165.

CHAPTER XI

EXCOMMUNICATION

131. *Definitions, Minor.*—Excommunication, as construed in law, is the official announcement by the superior authority of the termination of membership in a religious body and the forfeiture of spiritual privileges of the church. It is one of the methods of discipline in the nature of expulsion from membership in a fraternity, and the fact of expulsion from a church is conclusive proof that the person expelled is not a member of such church. Whether the excommunication was wrong or not can not be examined into in the courts of the State, and such expelled member can not maintain a suit in relation to church property nor vote for trustees.¹

132. *Major Excommunication.*—As excommunication *non tolerati* affects the rights of citizenship, it is not lawful in England nor the United States. To say that A. has been excommunicated in any form, if untrue, is slander.²

¹Shannon v. First, 42 Ky., 253.

²Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292; McGrath v. Finn, 16 Alb. L. J., 186; Morasse v. Borchee, 151 Mass., 567; 25 N. E., 74.

133. *Vote, Sentence.*—When a vote of excommunication from a church has been passed in the Congregational church and the offender thereby declared no longer a member, the sentence may be promulgated by being read in the presence of the congregation by the pastor.³

134. *Trustees, Disqualified.*—The trustees of a church who have been excommunicated are not thereby disqualified in law to act as trustees.⁴

135. *Devise, Void.*—A parent may leave money to a child payable in yearly instalments on condition that said child shall continue to be a member of a particular church and attend the regular meetings thereof, and in case he fail so to do that the bequest be thereupon paid to a missionary society. Such a devise is not contrary to the constitution of the State of Wisconsin and is not void for any other reason.⁵

136. *Fraternity, Excommunicated, Bequest.*—Where a church member was also a member of an insurance fraternity connected with his church, the constitution of which required that every member of the fraternity should be and remain a practical

³Farnsworth v. Storrs, 59 Mass., 412.

⁴Bowldin v. Alexander, 15 Wall., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69; Ante, sec. 116, post 156.

⁵In re Paulson's will, 127 Wis., 612; 107 N. W., 484.

Insubordination, Expulsion 137-139]

Roman Catholic, when he was excommunicated from membership in the church he thereby forfeited his benefit certificate in such fraternity.⁶ Also, a condition that a bequest shall be forfeited if the legatee should not marry a Protestant wife, the daughter of Protestant parents who have always been Protestants, was held to be valid and not an infringement of any constitutional right.⁷

137. *Action, Expulsion.*—An action can not be maintained against the parish corporation for expulsion from the church.⁸

138. *Forfeiture of Membership.*—Any member may forfeit his membership in a church.⁹

139. *Insubordination, Expulsion, Hearing.*—The authorities in the church, under its rules and discipline, have a right to exclude members in the church, for insubordination.¹⁰ If the church has no rules as to expulsion of members, the common law prevails, and a member can not be expelled without due notice and fair hearing.¹¹

⁶Barry v. C. K. of W., 119 Wis., 362; 93 N. W., 797.

⁷In re Knox, 25 Ch. Div., 542.

⁸Harden v. Baptist, 51 Mich., 137; 16 N. W., 311.

⁹Taylor v. Edison, 58 Mass., 522; Gray v. Christian, 137 Mass., 329.

¹⁰Fulbright v. Higgenbotham, 133 Mo., 668; 34 S. W., 875.

¹¹Jones v. State, 28 Neb., 495; 44 N. W., 658; 7 L. R. A., 325.

140. *Injunction, Mandamus, Sepulture.*—An injunction will not be granted to prevent the expulsion of a member contrary to the charter and by-laws of the denomination; but if a member be expelled without warrant of law, he has his remedy by mandamus for reinstatement.¹² A person who has been expelled can not maintain an action for restoration in order to enjoy the right of sepulture, as it is premature.¹³

141. *Expulsion, Illegal.*—The attempt of a minority of a church to expel the majority of the members and turn over the property to another denomination is illegal. However, the same would be true if it were done by the majority.¹⁴

142. *Freedom, Faith, Doctrine.*—The constitution in declaring the freedom of all men to worship God according to the dictates of their own consciences, does not give a church member the right to repudiate the faith and doctrine on which the church was founded, and at the same time to insist on his right to exercise and enjoy the benefits and privileges of a member of such church.¹⁵ Every person joining a church, impliedly, if not expressly, agrees to conform to its rules

¹²Hamel v. German, 1 Weekly Note Cases, 411.

¹³State v. Hebrew, 31 La. Ann., 205; 33 Am. Rep., 217.

¹⁴Deadrick v. Lampson, 58 Tenn., 523.

¹⁵Smith v. Pedigo. 145 Ind., 361; 32 L. R. A., 838.

and to submit to its authority and discipline.¹⁶ A person who has been expelled from a religious society can not maintain an action for services rendered the society while he was a member.¹⁷

¹⁶Lucas v. Case, 9 Bush, Ky., 297.

¹⁷Grosvenor v. U. S., 118 Mass., 78.

CHAPTER XII

ELECTIONS

143. *Time, Place, Void.*—Where a religious society that is incorporated holds an election for trustees, which is held at the wrong time or place, the election is void.¹

144. *Voting, Communicants, Attendance.*—A by-law of a church that prohibited any person whose pew rent was in arrears more than two years from voting at a church meeting, is valid and reasonable.² Where a charter of a religious society allowed only members being communicants to vote after they had attained the age of eighteen years, to entitle a member of the congregation to vote it was necessary that he should have taken the sacraments after the age of eighteen years.³ Where the right to vote was limited to members who contributed not less than ten shillings annually toward the support of the church, those who were challenged for want of complying with the rule

¹Miller v. English, 21 N. J. L., 317; 10 Cyc, 320-328; Rules of Order, Scanlan, 17.

²State v. Crowell, 9 N. J. L., 391; Commonwealth v. Cain, 5 Ser. & R., Pa., 510.

³Wegerle v. Geyer, 11 Ser. & R., Pa., 35.

can not do so after being challenged and then vote.⁴ Stated attendance at divine worship in the church, congregation, or society, and contribution to the support of such church, may be made the tests of the right of a person to be a voter at an election. The attendance of a wife or children of the family is not sufficient to confer the right to vote on the husband or father.⁵

145. *Voters, Poll List.*—Parol evidence is admissible to prove the number of persons entitled to vote in a church society, notwithstanding that there is a register of names of the stated hearers in such church kept by the clerk of the trustees.

146. *Notice, Quorum, Majority, Strangers.*—It is not necessary that a majority of the members of a religious society be present to constitute a corporate meeting. Those present at a regularly called meeting of which due notice has been given to all the members, constitute a quorum; and, in the absence of a rule to the contrary, a majority of the votes cast carries any question.⁶ The presence of strangers, unless they vote, will not vitiate the proceedings. If they should

⁴*Juker v. Commonwealth*, 20 Pa. St., 484; *St. Luke's v. Matthews*, 4 Desau, S. C., 578; *State v. Crowell*, 9 N. J. L., 391.

⁵*People v. Tuthill*, 31 N. Y., 550.

⁶*Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 18, 20; 10 Cyc, 329.

vote, unless their votes determine the election, it will not be void.⁷ The casting of a few illegal votes that would not change the result of the election does not make it void.⁸

147. Challenge, Ground.—The right of a person to vote at any meeting may be challenged. The proper time to challenge a voter is when he offers his vote. After his vote has been received it can not be thrown out on the ground that he was disqualified.⁹ A church election for which due notice has been given, that has been fairly conducted, and all the requirements of the statute or rules of the church complied with, is conclusive.¹⁰ Without due notice, all proceedings are void.¹¹

148. By-Laws, Usage.—If there is no law of a religious society determining the mode of conducting an election, the corporation may provide by-laws therefor; and if the corporation should fail to make such by-laws, a long established usage will govern.¹² Also, if the time an election is to be held is provided for, but the manner of con-

⁷Madison v. Baptist, 32 Howard's Pr., 335.

⁸People v. Tuthill, 31 N. Y., 550.

⁹Hart v. Harvey, 32 Barb., N. Y., 55.

¹⁰Alexander v. Bowers, 79 S. W., 342.

¹¹Rules of Order, Scanlan, 18, 20, 23; People v. Peck, 11 Wend., N. Y., 604.

¹²Rules of Order, Scanlan, 9; Gipson v. Morris, 83 S. W., Tex., 226; McCrary's Am. L. of Elections, secs. 298-300.

ducting it is not, the meeting may be conducted according to established usage.¹³

149. *Ballot, Hand Vote.*—The vote of a religious society at an annual meeting for the election of officers that the officers shall always be chosen by ballot, does not vitiate an election of officers by hand vote at a subsequent annual meeting. But a provision in the constitution or by-laws requiring a ballot must be complied with.¹⁴

150. *Hold Over, Successors.*—When the election of the new trustees is invalid, the old trustees hold over until there will have been a valid election of their successors.¹⁵ But where a board that was illegally elected employed a minister who had no notice of such illegality, he was entitled to his compensation according to the contract.¹⁶

151. *Majority, Votes Cast.*—Where the majority of a congregation protested against the proposed candidate, but failed to vote for any one, such candidate who received the greatest number of votes cast, was lawfully elected.¹⁷

¹³*Juker v. Commonwealth*, 20 Pa., 484.

¹⁴*Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 23-27; *Wardens v. Pope*, 8 Gray, Mass., 140.

¹⁵*Den. v. Pilling*, 24 N. J. L., 653.

¹⁶*Vestry v. Matthews*, 4 Desau, S. C., 578.

¹⁷*Cooley's Con. Lim.*, 619; *McCrary's Am. L. of Elections*, sec. 197; *Rules of Order*, Scanlan, 24-27.

152. *By-Law, Tickets.*—When a by-law provides that “if besides the names there are other things upon the tickets, such tickets are not to be counted,” a ballot having an engraved eagle on it should be rejected.¹⁸ However, in a very recent case under a statute that specifically provided what should be printed on the general election ballot, and in addition thereto the Union Labor label was printed thereon, the court held that the statute should be strictly construed in favor of the voter and that the ticket should be counted.¹⁹

¹⁸Commonwealth v. Woelper, 3 Ser. & R., Pa., 29.

¹⁹In re Peters, 112 N. Y. Sup., 339.

CHAPTER XIII

OFFICERS

153. *Charter, By-Laws.*—The articles of organization or the charter which is the constitution of the corporation may provide who may be officers of a religious society and limit their authority. The constitution usually gives further authority to make by-laws which are binding on the officers as well as on the members.¹

154. *Unincorporated Church, Incorporated.*—The officers of an unincorporated church can only be elected by the members of the church, unless there is some law of the State or rule of the church that provides for appointing them. In an incorporated congregation, the charter and by-laws of the corporation determine whether the officers shall be elected or appointed.²

155. *Trustees, Control.*—A statute passed in 1813 providing that a certificate of incorporation by the bishop, vicar-general, pastor of the church, and two others

¹Gram v. Prussia, 36 N. Y., 161.

²Wall v. Johnson, 140 Ind., 445; 39 N. E., 251; Simmons v. Allison, 118 N. C., 763.

selected by them and their successors shall be a body corporate, does not constitute the trustees the corporation in place of the congregation so as to make the acts of a majority of the trustees binding on the corporation in the absence of proof of other authority.³ Under the statutes of Louisiana providing for the incorporation of congregations for the purpose of administration and revenues, it was held that the corporation had full control and was responsible to the congregation alone and could not be controlled by the clergy. The congregation had the right to elect others in the places of those amoved by reason of their misuse or abuse of their powers.⁴ And in Massachusetts, under the law for incorporating Catholic parishes, no one but the trustees have any power.⁵

156. *Membership, Office.*—Where church membership is necessary to hold office in the church corporation, it is a binding condition precedent.⁶ An officer who withdraws or is expelled from a religious organization thereby terminates his office.⁷

³People v. St. Anthony, 109 N. Y., 512; 17 N. E., 408.

⁴Congregation v. Martin, 4 Rob., 62; Wardens v. Blanc, 8 Rob., 51; St. Andrew's Ch. v. Schaugnessy, 63 Neb., 792; 89 N. W., 261.

⁵Enos v. Church, 187 Mass., 40; 72 N. E., 253.

⁶Ross v. Crockett, 14 La. Ann., 811.

⁷Laight v. Noe, 12 Howard's Pr., 497; Contra: In re Willams, 105 N. Y. S., 1105; Ante, 116, 134.

Term, Successors, Contest 157-158]

157. Certificate of Election.—A certificate of election of officers is prima facie evidence thereof, but the truth may be shown *aliunde* and a wrong certificate may be cancelled by a judgment of a competent court on a writ of *quo warranto* or proceeding under a statute of the State. Also, if the certificate does not conform to the law, it is insufficient.⁸

158. Term, Successors, Contest.—Where there is no term of office fixed, the presumption is that an officer continues as such until proof to the contrary is established,⁹ or until his successor shall have been elected and shall have qualified.¹⁰ Also, the officers elected for a certain term can not be amoved by electing new officers before the end of the term.¹¹ When officers or committees have been elected "for the ensuing year," they shall hold office until superseded by their duly elected successors. Where two sets of officers were elected at a meeting of a religious corporation and the set that was elected according to the charter continued in office by appointment thereafter, it was

⁸People v. Lacoste, 37 N. Y., 192; Fadness v. Braunberg, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84; McCrary on Am. L. of Elections, secs. 209, 264; 10 Cyc, 347; People v. Nappa, 89 Mich., 232; 50 N. W., 846.

⁹Hendrickson v. Shotwell, 1 N. J. Eq., 577.

¹⁰Congregation v. Sperry, 10 Conn., 200; 10 Cyc., 319.

¹¹Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653.

too late for the irregularly elected officers to make a contest for the offices after the term for which they had been elected had expired.¹²

159. *By-Laws, Preside.*—At an election of trustees under by-laws that provide that certain officers shall preside, if there are no such officers members may be selected to preside in their places.¹³

160. *Note, Overdraft, Interest.*—The president and secretary of a church corporation have no authority to make a promissory note unless authorized by the board of trustees.¹⁴ Neither has the treasurer authority to make an overdraft on a bank with the action of the trustees.¹⁵ The trustees of a parish, however, may make a note binding the congregation for the payment of the money used in building a church.¹⁶ But when the trustees have an interest in the transaction, adverse to the congregation, they are disqualified from acting.¹⁷ When trustees had claims against the congregation which they included with other claims that

¹²Smith v. Erb, 5 Gill., Md., 437.

¹³People v. Peck, 11 Wend., N. Y., 604.

¹⁴Catron v. First, 46 Ia., 106; People v. St. Anthony's, 109 N. Y., 512; 17 N. E., 408.

¹⁵Columbia v. Gospel, 127 N. Y., 361.

¹⁶First v. Caughey, 85 Pa., 271.

¹⁷San Antonia v. Adams, 87 Tex., 125; 26 S. W., 1040; Hill v. Rich, 119 Mo., 9; 24 S. W., 223.

Treasurer, Accepting a Draft 161-162]

third parties had against the church, they could not put them in a judgment note so as to get a lien upon the church property. When officers do not bind the congregation, they usually bind themselves.¹⁸ The trustees of an unincorporated church can not bind it beyond the expressed powers granted by the members.¹⁹

161. *Board, Control.*—When the laws of the organization give control of matters to the board of trustees, the majority of the members of the church can not control the action of the trustees contrary to the usages and regulations of the church.²⁰

162. *Treasurer, Accepting a Draft.*—A parish treasurer has no authority under any condition to bind the corporation by accepting a draft in favor of a third person. A treasurer elected for the purpose of receiving and investing funds in his individual name, holds such funds as trustee for the church and is subject as such trustee to a court of equity. Persons claiming to be trustees of a church but never getting possession of their offices or the property of the church, can not maintain an action against

¹⁸Hewitt v. Wheeler, 22 Conn., 577; Devos v. Gray, 22 Ohio, 159; Klopp v. Moore, 6 Kan., 27; Neil v. Spencer, 5 Ill. App., 461; United v. Vandusen, 37 Wis., 54.

¹⁹Müller v. Church, 4 Phil., 48.

²⁰Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre, 32 Ill., 183.

other persons who are in possession and have been duly elected.²¹

163. *Note, Trustees.*—A church will not be bound by a note which was executed by two of its trustees and sent around to other trustees to sign it, where there was no vote of the board of trustees at an authorized meeting to borrow or to execute such note.²² A meeting of a board must be called as required by law or the by-laws of the organization, and in the absence of any such all members must be notified a reasonable time before the time fixed for holding the meeting. However, if all the trustees are present and agree to hold a meeting it is valid; but it would be well to put such consent in writing and have all the members sign it.²³

164. *Money, Powers.*—The treasurer of a congregation has no right to return to members moving out of the parish a part of the money paid for the church by them.²⁴ Officers of a corporation have no powers only those conferred upon them by the charter and by-laws of the corporation or by a majority vote of a duly called meeting of the congregation.²⁵ When the trustees of a

²¹N. Baptist v. Parker, 36 Barb., N. Y., 171.

²²Dennison v. Austin, 15 Wis., 334.

²³United v. Vandusen, 37 Wis., 54; MacLaury v. Hart, 121 N. Y., 636; 24 N. E., 1013.

²⁴Vestry v. Barksdale, 1 Strobb. Eq., S. C., 197.

²⁵New v. Gress, 89 Ga., 125.

church are authorized to execute contracts for the church, they should act as a body or delegate the power to one of their number or ratify the acts of one of their number.²⁶ The individual disjointed action of trustees of a religious society, at various times and places, although assented to by a majority, is not the action of the board, and is not binding on the society. To make the action of the board of trustees binding, they must duly meet and by a vote determine their action.²⁷

165. *De Facto Officers.*—The acts of *de facto* officers can not usually be questioned in a collateral proceeding, such as to set aside a conveyance, when the merits of the question do not involve the election.²⁸ Being elected does not alone make a person a *de facto* officer; but he must also be acting in the particular office to which he claims to have been elected.²⁹ But one who has entered into a contract with the officers of a congregation is estopped from denying their authority to make such contract.³⁰

²⁶10 Cyc, 776-9; In re Denny, 156 Ind., 104; 59 N. E., 359; 51 L. R. A., 722.

²⁷Rules of Order, Scanlan, 21; U. S. v. Balm, 144 U. S., 1; 12 Sup. Ct. R., 507; 36 L. Ed., 321; The Catholic Encyclopedia, vol. i, 289.

²⁸Cicotte v. Anciaux, 53 Mich., 227; 18 N. W., 793.

²⁹Trustees v. Halverson, 42 Minn., 503; 44 N. W., 663.

³⁰Skinner v. Richardson, 76 Wis., 464; 45 N. W., 318; Dennison v. Auston, 15 Wis., 334

166. *Trustees, Thanks, Charge.*—Where trustees have taken care of funds without charge, the only entry kept being a vote of thanks from time to time, they could not afterward charge a commission on the moneys handled by them for such services.³¹

167. *Discretion, Excommunication.*—A court has no authority to control the exercise of the judgment or discretion of the officers of a church in the management of its funds so long as they do not violate its constitution or by-laws.³² Excommunication does not always amove an officer of a church corporation.³³ The legal rights of a bishop in regard to the temporalities of a church where they are not prescribed by civil law, must rest, if at all, upon the ecclesiastical law, which must be determined by evidence.³⁴

168. *Key, Possession, Right.*—Having the key of a church, is prima facie evidence of possession, but the right of possession is a matter of proof.³⁵

169. *Church, Bishop, Debts, Salary of a Priest.*—Where a church is not itself liable because it is not incorporated, the Roman Catholic bishop of the diocese is not person-

³¹*Vestry v. Barksdale*, 1 Strobb, S. C. Eq., 197.

³²*State v. Ahnapee*, 99 Wis., 322; 74 N. W., 783.

³³*Bowldin v. Alexander*, 82 U. S., 131; 21 L. Ed., 69; *The Catholic Encyclopedia*, vol. iii, 755, 756.

³⁴*Leahy v. Williams*, 141 Mass., 345; 6 N. E., 78.

³⁵*People v. Runkel*, 8 Johnson, N. Y., 464.

ally liable for moneys borrowed by the pastors of such church in the name of the church, which were partly invested in real estate which was put in the bishop's name in the usual manner, although the bishop's permission was necessary before borrowing the money, and notwithstanding that the bishop raised some of the money to pay some of the debts and the mortgage on the real estate of the church on his personal security, and he received part of the borrowed funds from a dying pastor and handed it over to his successor.³⁶ Also, a bishop is not personally liable for the salary of a priest whom he engages. They are fellow servants working for the Church and not in the relation of employer and employee any more than are a general and captain in the same army.³⁷

170. *Note, Building Committee.*—In an action on a note given by the pastor of a church for money borrowed to pay bills for the erection of the church building, in which the plaintiff sought to charge the building committee, and it appeared from the plaintiff's testimony that the title to the property was in the bishop and the committee did not handle any of the funds, but was a shifting

³⁶*Leahy v. Williams*, 141 Mass., 345.

³⁷*Rose v. Vertin*, 46 Mich., 457; 9 N. W., 491; *Tuigg v. Sheehan*, 101 Pa., 363.

body to whom the pastor only went for advice and consultation, it was held that the plaintiff could not recover.³⁸

171. *Fraud, Trust.*—Where a “prophet” induced members of his organization, by his fraud and deceit, to convey to him all their property in discharge of a religious duty and then refused to account to them, the court declared the trust closed and divided the estate among the members in proportion to the money, property, and labor contributed by each of them.³⁹

172. *Superioress, Money.*—A person who contributed money for the purpose of repairing a convent, the money being turned over to the superioress and the convent not being incorporated, upon the project being abandoned subsequently a personal judgment could not be obtained against the superioress for the money contributed.⁴⁰

173. *Loan, Priest.*—If a man lends money to a priest for the purpose of paying a note against the congregation left at the bank for collection, he can recover the money so paid from the congregation.⁴¹

174. *Warden, Wages, Sexton.*—A church warden who was hired by the trus-

³⁸Freeport v. Egan, 146 Pa., 106; 23 At., 390.

³⁹Scott v. Thompson, 21 Ia., 599.

⁴⁰Emonds v. Termehr, 60 Ia., 92; 14 N. W., 197.

⁴¹Wojcienchowski v. Johnknowski, 16 Pa. Sup. Ct., 444.

tees of a church can not collect his wages by an action against the priest of the parish.⁴² A church accepting the services of a sexton is liable to him therefor, whether the by-laws were observed in employing him or not; nor will the fact that any party (as in this case the Ladies of the Altar Society) agreed to contribute to his annual salary, defeat his recovery of the whole from the church employing him.⁴³

175. *Sewing Circle, Money.*—A church may maintain an action against a sewing circle to require it to pay over money collected for the benefit of the church.⁴⁴

⁴²*Chiniqui v. Delaire*, 37 Ill., 237.

⁴³*St. Patrick's v. Abst.*, 76 Ill., 252.

⁴⁴*First v. Prior*, 23 Hun., 271.

CHAPTER XIV

MEETINGS

176. *Business, Notice, Meeting.*—Where, in the transaction of the local business of a religious society, whether incorporated or not, meetings of the members shall become necessary, in order to make such meetings legal due notice thereof should be given to every member. The notice should specify the exact time and place where the meeting will be held, and no change can be made except at such time and place. Unless some other place is specified, the parish church is the proper place for holding meetings. If the church should be locked and the key can not be found, a meeting should be held at the door or at the nearest practical place to the church where all the members may assemble, and then by a majority vote they may adjourn to any convenient near place accessible to all the members.¹

177. *Acts, Void, Lawful, Clerk.*—The acts of a majority of the members of a corporation, unless done according to law and

¹Den. v. Pilling, 24 N. J. L., 653; Rules of Order, Scanlan, 15-18.

in conformity with the charter and by-laws of the corporation, are absolutely null and void.² The only lawful manner by which a congregation can express itself, is by a meeting regularly called and held upon due notice.³ The notice of a meeting should be authorized by the trustees or other authority of the church, and given to all the members. The clerk of the board of trustees, unless authorized to do so, has no authority to sign the name of the members of the board to a notice, and a meeting called in that way is illegal.⁴

178. *Special Meeting, Notice.*—When a meeting is special, the notice must state for what purpose the meeting is called. If it fails to do so it is void, and unless all the members are present and consent to the holding of the meeting, all business transacted is illegal and void.⁵ Notice of a special meeting that states one specific purpose for which it is called, and then states “to transact any other business that may legally come before the meeting,” is not good for any purpose except the one specified.⁶

²German v. Pressler, 17 La. Ann., 127.

³Appeal of McAuley, 77 Pa., 397.

⁴Bethany v. Sperry, 10 Conn., 200.

⁵Weber v. Zimmermann, 22 Md., 156.

⁶Downs v. Bowdoin, 149 Mass., 135; 21 N. E., 294.

179. *Meeting, Consent.*—A valid meeting can not be held by a corporation, unless notice has been given in conformity with the laws and rules and regulations of the corporation or the consent of every person who is entitled to be present at the holding of such meeting. In the latter case the consent should be in writing and signed by all the members.⁷ However, a person who attends a meeting and takes part in it without objection, is estopped from raising the question of notice.⁸

180. *Notice, Principal Service, Custom.*—When a rule of a church required notice of a meeting to be given at the principal service, a notice given at an earlier service only, was void.⁹ But where the ordinances of a church specified that the election of officers should be at least six days before the end of their term, and it became the custom of the church to hold the election on a movable holiday which sometimes was less than six days, the election was held valid.¹⁰

181. *Adjournment.*—Where a meeting was noticed for one day and held on a different day without notice of adjournment, all acts done were void and the officers

⁷Smith v. Erb., 4 Gill., Md., 437.

⁸Helbig v. Rosenberg, 86 Ia., 159; 53 N. W., 111.

⁹Dahl v. Palache, 68 Cal., 248.

¹⁰People v. Runkel, 9 Johnson, 147.

elected were neither *de jure* nor *de facto* officers.¹¹

182. *Proof of the Notice.*—The proper proof of the notice would be the return of the officer serving the notice, in some States; and in others an affidavit of the person who served the notice. The proof of the services of a summons would be sufficient unless there is some other law or rule to the contrary.¹²

183. *Presiding Officer.*—When the laws of the organization provide who shall preside at a meeting, but the minister contrary to such laws and against objections presided over the majority of the congregation, and the minority was presided over by the proper person, and both elected officers, the officers elected by the minority were the lawful ones.¹³ However, where a meeting is presided over without objection by a member instead of the proper officer, the acts of the body are lawful.¹⁴

184. *Voters, Rules.*—Unless the laws of the State otherwise provide, every religious organization has the right to determine who shall vote at its meetings and elections. If those provisions are reasonable, they are

¹¹First v. Hillary, 51 Cal., 155.

¹²Tuttle v. Cary, 7 Me., 426.

¹³State v. Steward, 6 Houst., Del., 9.

¹⁴Jones v. Cary, 6 Me., 448; Rules of Order, Scanlan, 29-30.

lawful. Under such provisions it has been repeatedly held that where there are rules requiring annual subscriptions to the church,¹⁵ only those who rented and paid for pews, or those who paid a certain annual tax, or those who went to communion, were entitled to vote.¹⁶ And where there was no rule, it was held that one who has not contributed to the church¹⁷ and persons who attended church only occasionally and contributed only when they attended, were not qualified voters.¹⁸ In the last case it was stated that a qualified voter is one who has attended regularly during the year and has contributed to the support of the church.

185. *Quorum, Majority.*—A quorum of a congregation usually consists of those present at a duly called regular meeting, and a majority of those present is sufficient to carry questions, unless by rule or law otherwise provided.¹⁹ But where there is a definite body in a corporation which has established no other rule, a majority of the members of the corporation constitute a quorum.²⁰ Where the minutes of the clerk

¹⁵State v. Steward, 6 Houst., Del., 359.

¹⁶Juker v. Commonwealth, 20 Pa., 484; McIlvain v. Christ's Church, 8 Phil., 507.

¹⁷Livingston v. Trinity Church, 45 N. J. L., 230.

¹⁸People v. Tuthill, 31 N. Y., 550.

¹⁹Madison v. Baptist, 46 N. Y., 131.

²⁰Moore v. St. Thomas' Church, 4 Abb., N. Y., 51.

stated that upon due notice the members of the corporation met, a quorum is presumed.²¹

186. *Votes, Challenge, Inspectors, Casting Vote.*—The reception of illegal votes does not invalidate an election unless they change the result.²² If the presiding officer refuses to allow a qualified voter to vote, the right may be enforced through civil courts.²³ When votes have been received without challenge, it is then too late to raise the objection that the persons have no right to vote.²⁴ It is the duty of the inspectors to determine the qualifications of an elector at the time that he offers to vote, and before he votes; and if they decide in the exercise of their judgment, without malice or improper motives, the regularity of the election can not be questioned.²⁵ When a rule allows the presiding officer to vote and another rule states that he shall have the casting vote in case of a tie vote, he still had the right to cast the decisive vote.²⁶ Illegal voting in a religious society probably is not an indictable offense, but it is a disorderly act.²⁷

²¹*Commonwealth v. Woelper*, 3 Ser. & R., 29.

²²*Wardens v. Pope*, 74 Mass., 140.

²³*Oakes v. Hill*, 6 Weekly Notes, Cas., 346.

²⁴*Hartt v. Harvey*, 32 Barb., 55.

²⁵*Weckerly v. Geyer*, 11 Ser. & R., 35.

²⁶*People v. Church*, 48 Barb., 603.

²⁷*Allen v. Gray*, 11 Conn., 95.

187. *Written Notice, Prayer Meeting.*—Where a five days' written notice is required to hold church meetings, an oral notice given on Sunday evening at the prayer meeting is not sufficient for a meeting on the following Wednesday. But a vote taken on Sunday to hire the minister and fix his salary, is not void.²⁸ Churches and benefit societies, such as insurance fraternities, being charitable organizations, may do business concerning such association on Sunday.²⁹

188. *Expulsion, Damages.*—A man who has been wrongfully expelled from a temperance society for religious reasons may recover damages therefor.³⁰

²⁸Arthur v. Norfield, 49 At., 241; 73 Conn., 718.

²⁹Pepin v. Societies, 23 R. I., 81; 60 L. R. A., 626.

³⁰Lahiff v. St. Joseph's T. A. B. S., 76 Conn., 648; 65 L. R. A., 92.

CHAPTER XV

CHURCH RECORDS

189. *Evidence, Entries, Minutes.*—The record of the proceedings of a religious society is evidence as to its doings, both in its own tribunals and the courts of the State. Such record consists of entries required to be made by the laws or rules of the society, the laws of the State, and the minutes adopted by the society. Therefore, it is of the greatest importance that it be kept with great exactness, omitting nothing that is important.¹ Also, the minutes of all the meetings should be correct before being duly adopted. All erasures and interlineations should be certified by the clerk and then signed by him.

190. *Uniformity.*—Every entry required to be kept by the laws of the State as well as the rules of the Church, should be kept as to births, marriages, and death. Every diocese should have uniform record books in all parishes and every pastor should keep blanks printed in the form of a page of the record book, to issue certificates when required.

¹10 Cyc, 1067.

191. *Marriage, Death, Baptism, Birth, Church Records.*—The church records duly kept in accordance with the discipline of the church, are admissible in evidence to prove marriage, death, and baptism. Where the record is incomplete, as giving the date of baptism only, it is not admissible in proof of date of birth. But if it gives the date of birth, it is *prima facie* proof thereof.²

192. *Certified Copies.*—Under statutes, certified copies of the record made by the custodian thereof are admissible in evidence in any case where the original would be admissible. Also, one who had compared a copy with the original record may testify to the same. The rule, as given, substantially prevails under statutes in the following States: Alabama, Georgia, Illinois, Indiana, Kansas, Kentucky, Louisiana, Maryland, Minnesota, Missouri, Oklahoma, Pennsylvania, Rhode Island, and Wisconsin; and also, in Ontario, Manitoba, and the Dominion of Canada.

193. *Rule of Admissibility.*—A certified copy of the record of a baptism taken from a church register by the parish priest, when admissible at the place where such record is

²17 Cyc, 405; 2 Jones on Ev., secs. 522, 523; Conflict of L., Wharton, vol. ii, sec. 761, pp. 1496-8; Collins v. German, Am. M. I. Ass., 112 Mo. App., 209; 86 S. W., 891; Layton v. Kraft, 98 N. Y., 996.

kept, as in Ireland, is admissible to prove the same fact in the State of Missouri.³

194. *Proper Record.*—A book kept by a minister, which contained a regular statement in proper form of the admission of members, choice of officers, and transaction of business of the church, which was the only book kept by the parish, is the proper record of the church.⁴

195. *Name, Record.*—The author would like to emphasize the importance of correct records. Frequently we find no Christian name given in the records of birth, which practically makes the record worthless. When a child is born it is entitled to a name, immediately, which should be given and be correct. At least the first Christian name should be correct; a mistake in a middle name is not material. This is true of deeds and records of all kinds, but practically of births, deaths, and marriages.⁵

³Collins v. German, 112 Mo. App., 209; Sandberg, v. The State, 113 Wis., 578; 89 N. W., 504.

⁴Sawyer v. Baldwin, 11 Pickering, 492.

⁵Finher v. Hanegen, 59 Ark., 151; 24 L. R. A., 543.

CHAPTER XVI

CHURCH TRIBUNALS

196. *Jurisdiction, Privileges.*—It is usual for every fraternity to have a tribunal of its own for the trial of members who break its laws or violate its discipline. Within their jurisdiction, the laws of the State give such tribunals great privileges and courts show them great respect. The Freemasons, the Knights of Columbus, etc., and most of the churches, have such courts.¹

197. *Trial, Property, Priest.*—In most of the States a court will not interfere with the fair trial of a church tribunal. Neither will the court entertain a controversy concerning the title or right of possession of real or personal property excepting at the instance of some person claiming a right thereto derived from or recognized by the law of the State or of the United States.² But when the bishop has deprived a subordinate priest of his authority to officiate as such, he may

¹Mt. Zion v. Whitmore, 83 Ia., 138; 49 N. W., 846; 13 L. R. A., 198.

²Bonacum v. Murphy, 65 Neb., 831; 98 N. W., 1030; 71 Neb., 463; 102 N. W., 267; 104 ib., 180; Nance v. Busby, 91 Tenn., 303; 18 S. W., 874; 15 L. R. A., 801.

enjoin the priest from making use of the church property.³

198. *Doubt, Legal Rights.*—The foregoing rule has some doubt cast on it in Delaware and Massachusetts. The investigation of a dispute between members of a church by a committee according to church regulations, consented to by the parties, in which both take part, can have no effect on their legal rights. If the State law provides for cases of the kind, it is superior and must be submitted to. Also, an award or proceeding of a committee is not evidence for or against either party. However, any statement made, or admissions of the parties, if not of a recognized confidential nature, may be given in evidence on the trial in a court of the State.⁴ The judgment of a mutual ecclesiastical council legally convoked will not bind either party rejecting it.⁵

199. *Bishop, Priest, Redress.*—When a bishop removes a priest in the regular way according to the rules and discipline of his church, the priest has no redress.⁶ Also, when a priest has submitted his case to the church tribunal according to the discipline of his church, he must abide by its decision,

³Bonacum v. Harrington, 65 Neb., 831; 91 N. W., 886.

⁴Tubbs v. Lynch, 4 Harr., Del., 521.

⁵Sterns v. Bedford, 21 Pickering, 114.

⁶O'Donovan v. Chatard, 97 Ind., 421.

excepting where his civil rights or property rights as a citizen are involved, when he may appeal to the laws of the land.⁷

200. *Trial, Counsel.*—The question whether a minister on trial in a church tribunal is entitled to be heard by counsel or attorneys depends upon the laws of the church, and it can not be said as a matter of law that he is entitled to counsel.⁸

201. *Removal, Suspension, Trial.*—In the United States under the laws and discipline of the Catholic Church a priest may be removed from the charge of a congregation at the pleasure of the bishop, without trial; but he can not be suspended from his priestly functions without specific accusation and trial.⁹

202. *Charges, Fair Trial, Hearsay Evidence.*—When a clergyman or officer is to be removed or a member of the congregation is to be excommunicated, it is necessary to fully state the charges against him and give him an opportunity for a fair trial according to the laws and rules of the religious society before rendering final judgment. All the allegations of the complaint should be made upon positive knowledge of the complainant

⁷Baxter v. McDonald, 155 N. Y., 83; 49 N. E., 667.

⁸Gibbs v. Gilead, 38 Conn., 153.

⁹Stack v. O'Hara, 98 Pa., 213.

Remedies, Secular Courts **203-204]**

or upon evidence that is admissible to prove the case in court. Rumor or gossip, known as mere hearsay evidence, is not sufficient to base a charge against the character of any one.¹⁰

203. Trial, Testimony, Slander.—A church judgment, where there has been a full and fair trial or when members submit to the church tribunal, and the judgment has only been rebuke, censure, suspension, or excommunication, is usually upheld by the courts; and when the testimony given on such trial is concerning immoral or scandalous conduct or crime, if those taking part act in good faith and within the scope of the authority of the church, they are protected by law and not liable to an action for damages for libel or slander.¹¹

204. Remedies, Secular Courts.—In cases involving church doctrine and discipline only, all remedies within the church must be exhausted by a member before the secular courts will interfere, if they will interfere at all.¹²

¹⁰29 Cyc, 204, and "Religious Societies"; Am. & Eng. Cyc. of L., "Religious Societies" and "Beneficial Societies"; 2 Benefit Societies & L. Insurance, Bacon, secs. 400a and 450a.

¹¹Farnsworth v. Storrs, 59 Mass., 412.

¹²Hatfield v. Delong, 24 Ind. App., 343; 51 L. R. A., 751; Ryan v. Cudahy, 157 Ill., 108; 41 N. E., 760; 49 L. R. A., 353.

205. *Notice, Waiver.*—When the laws of the church provide the tribunal and procedure, if the person proceeded against avoids the service of the notice or refuses to submit to the court, the notice of trial required to be served might thereby be considered waived and the tribunal might proceed with the trial in the absence of the accused.¹³

206. *Appeal, Decision, Limitation.*—The right to appeal from one court to another of higher jurisdiction is generally recognized.¹⁴ If after trial in the lower tribunal of the Church, an appeal is taken, the decision on the appeal is binding upon the parties and also upon the inferior tribunal.¹⁵ In the Anglican and some other churches, there is no limitation as to time when offenses against the discipline of the church may be inquired into.¹⁶

The Catholic Church has a limitation as to prescriptive rights, to-wit: "Three years in case of movable property; ten years in case of a right, or of immovable property, *inter praesentes*; twenty years in the same case, *inter absentes*."¹⁷ Also, there are limitations in canonical cases, varying from one

¹³Sampsell v. Esher, 26 Weekly Law Bulletin, Ohio, 156.

¹⁴Day v. Robinson, 12 N. J. L., 206.

¹⁵Diffendorf v. Reformed Church, 20 Johnson, N. Y., 12.

¹⁶Chase v. Cheney, 58 Ill., 509.

¹⁷Catholic Dictionary, Addis & Arnold, "Prescription."

to twenty years.¹⁸ There is no statute of limitation on lawful debts.

207. *Procedure, Judge, Juror, Witness.*—If there are no rules of procedure prescribed by the church tribunal, the proper practice is to follow the State courts; as, for example, where the State law forbids an officer of the court who has an interest in the proceeding to sit as judge or juror, the same would apply to the church tribunal, it being the common law of the land. Also, in States where a person who is interested in a matter is not a competent witness, in the absence of a different rule in the church, the same rule would apply in the church tribunal.¹⁹

208. *Catholic Discipline.*—A church member has no right to sue any one in holy orders in the civil court without leave. That is, a layman or priest should obtain leave of the bishop to sue a priest. In some countries it is ground for excommunication to violate the rule. This rule is analogous to the general rule that a sovereign state can not be sued without its consent.²⁰ In this country, where there is no ecclesiastical court recognized in law, leave is rarely asked.²¹

¹⁸Legal Formulary, Baart, 462.

¹⁹Juker v. Commonwealth, 20 Pa. St., 484.

²⁰Beers v. Arkansas, 20 How., U. S., 527; 15 L. Ed., 991.

²¹See "Benefit of the Clergy" and "Forum Ecclesiasticum," in The Catholic Encyclopedia and in the Catholic Dictionary.

CHAPTER XVII

STATE COURTS

209. *Decision, Ecclesiastical Matter.*—

The decision of the highest tribunal of the church on a purely ecclesiastical matter will not be disturbed by civil courts unless it is in open defiance and express violation of the constitution of such body.¹

210. *Right of Property, Civil Rights.*—

Where there are several church tribunals one above another, when the highest tribunal having jurisdiction of the case has decided a question as to the right of property, a civil court will accept such decision of the church tribunal as conclusive.² The courts give way to the usages and regulations of the church so far as they are not inconsistent with the constitution and laws of the State.³ As far as civil rights are concerned, the

¹Kuns v. Robinson, 154 Ill., 394; 40 N. E., 343; Brundage v. Deardorf, 55 Fed., 839; Watson v. Jones, 80 U. S., 679; 20 L. Ed., 666; Bird v. St. Mark's, 62 Ia., 567; 17 N. W., 747; Perry v. Wheeler, 75 Ky., 541; Powers v. Bundy, 45 Neb., 208; 63 N. W., 476; Connit v. Reformed, 54 N. Y., 551; Harrison v. Hoyle, 24 Ohio St., 254; Krecker v. Shirey, 163 Pa., 534; 30 At., 540.

²Watson v. Jones, 80 U. S., 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

³Prickett v. Wells, 117 Mo., 502; 24 S. W., 52; Pounder v. Ash, 36 Neb., 564; 54 N. W., 847.

statute of limitations may be pleaded even where those rights are founded upon some law or rule of the denomination.⁴

211. *Creed, Factions, Property, Management.*—The supreme court exercises no ecclesiastical jurisdiction, but accepts what the highest ecclesiastical authority in each church promulgates as the faith and practice of that church, and will not determine for itself what that faith or creed is in order to establish the rights of respective factions in the church to the church property. But a majority of a congregation that secedes from the church and forms a new organization can not claim any of the property.⁵ The civil courts will not interfere with church management so far as concerns the spiritual discipline of the members, but where civil rights of property are involved, the courts may determine them.⁶ The civil rights of a religious society or its members are within the jurisdiction of the State courts.⁷

212. *Trust, Court of Equity.*—A conveyance in trust for the use of a church vests the use in the church and it will be protected by a court of equity.⁸

⁴Atty-Gen. v. Fed., 69 Mass., 1.

⁵Mt. Helen v. Jones, 79 Miss., 488; 30 So., 714.

⁶Prickett v. Wells, 117 Mo., 502; 24 S. W., 52.

⁷Ferraria v. Vasconcellos, 31 Ill., 25.

⁸Garten v. Penick, 68 Ky., 110.

213. *Injunction, Closing Church, Paying Money, Disturbances.*—A court of equity will issue an injunction against the trustees of a church from wrongfully closing it or keeping it closed even against a small minority.⁹ Church property vested in trustees of a religious body is held under trust and a court of equity has jurisdiction to enforce the trust.¹⁰ A court of equity may restrain the trustees of a church from paying money to a duly deposed minister.¹¹ But a court of equity will not interfere to quell religious disturbances when no question as to property or civil rights is involved. The board of trustees of a church can not remove a priest against the will of the congregation.¹²

214. *Suits, Parties.*—Where a number of persons have contributed to the erection of a church, it is not necessary for all who contribute to join in an action to restrain a sale of the property for mercantile purposes.¹³ Any member of a church not incorporated may come into a court of equity in behalf of himself and others and enforce the execution of a trust in favor of the church.¹⁴ The same rule would apply to a church

⁹*Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre*, 31 Ill., 183.

¹⁰*Lawson v. Kolbenson*, 61 Ill., 405.

¹¹*Robertson v. Bullions*, 11 N. Y., 243.

¹²*Papalion v. Manusos*, 113 Ill. App., 316.

¹³*Avery v. Baker*, 27 Neb., 388; 43 N. W., 174.

¹⁴*Trustees v. Trustees*, 4 N. J. Eq., 77.

where any one in authority is violating the law.¹⁵ If several congregations of a diocese are interested in litigation, to hold all the property of the diocese liable for the debt of a parish, each congregation is entitled to be made a party.¹⁶

215. *Complaint.*—A complaint that the plaintiffs hold one doctrinal standard and the defendants another is sufficiently definite without explaining the difference between the two.¹⁷

216. *Church Tribunal, Courts.*—Courts are reluctant to interfere in the church doctrine or discipline or inquire into the regularity of the proceedings of the church tribunal. When such tribunal has deposed a pastor or expelled a member, it is final. However, in contracts, property rights, and civil rights of a citizen, the courts take jurisdiction. It is no defense to a pastor's expulsion that there is salary due him.¹⁸

217. *Unincorporated Congregation, Actions, Interest.*—An unincorporated congregation may be sued on contract in its associate capacity, though no persons are named

¹⁵Nash v. Sutton, 117 N. C., 231; 23 S. E., 178; Wiswell v. First, 14 Ohio St., 31.

¹⁶Mannix v. Purcell, 46 Ohio St., 102.

¹⁷Baker v. Ducker, 79 Cal., 365; 21 Pac., 764.

¹⁸Morris v. Dart, 67 S. C., 338; 45 S. E., 753; 100 Am. St. Rep., 734.

as trustees or committeeman.¹⁹ In all actions by or against a congregation the civil courts will not permit suits to be brought by complainants who have no interest either legal or equitable in the temporalities of the church.²⁰ A suit against a society of Shakers consisting of indefinite membership with changing additions, withdrawals, and deaths, whose property is held in common without any individual interest, may properly be brought in equity as the remedy at law would be inadequate.²¹

218. *Blasphemy, Sabbath, Lord's Prayer, Bible.*—Christianity is a part of the common law of the United States; it is on this ground that blasphemy and violation of the Sabbath are made criminal offenses and that the Lord's Prayer and the Bible are used in the schools.²²

¹⁹*Phipps v. Jones*, 20 Pa., 260.

²⁰*Dolan v. City*, 4 Gill., 394.

²¹*Shakers v. Watson*, 68 Fed., 730.

²²61 Cen. L. J., 49 and 55; 57 C. L. J., 201.

CHAPTER XVIII

EVIDENCE

219. *Judicial Notice.*—A church takes judicial notice without proof of its own rules, laws, and doctrines. Every other fact should be proved according to the rules of evidence of the church, and in the absence of a church rule the following rules of the courts of this country should prevail:

1. Nothing should be admitted in evidence unless it directly proves or disproves an evidentiary fact forming a link of a chain of facts that will prove a fact in issue.

2. It is sufficient to prove the substance of the issue, unless the exact word or thing forms the issue.

3. The burden of proof is on the one who asserts the fact, whether it is stated affirmatively or negatively, and its proof is necessary to his making a case.

4. The best evidence that the case in its nature affords must be produced.

5. Mere hearsay evidence shall not be allowed, excepting:

- (a) Matters of public or general interest.
- (b) Declaration against interest.
- (c) Dying declarations.
- (d) The testimony of witnesses since dead or absent.
- (e) Admissions.
- (f) Confessions.

220. *Competent Witness.*—Everybody who has the use of reason and understands the import of an oath is a competent witness.

221. *Confessions, Secret Societies.*—At common law, confessions were admissible; but there is no case in the United States since 1813 where the court has sent a priest to jail for contempt for refusing to disclose a confession, and no case in which a priest disclosed a confession. Immediately after a priest was committed for contempt for refusing to divulge the secrets of the confessional, in 1813, New York enacted the following law: “No minister of the gospel, or priest of any denomination whatsoever, shall be allowed to disclose any confession made to him in his professional character, in the course of discipline enjoined by the rules or practice of such denomination.” A similar law has been adopted in the following States and Territories: Alabama, Arizona, California, Colorado, Idaho, Iowa,

Kansas, Kentucky, Michigan, Missouri, Nebraska, Nevada, North Dakota, Ohio, New York, Oklahoma, South Dakota, Utah, Washington, Wisconsin, Wyoming, and Hawaii. The secrets of a secret society are not privileged, and a member as a witness must answer all relevant questions in court.¹

222. *Privilege, Answer.*—When a question concerning a matter privileged is put, the priest should say: “I claim my privilege as a clergyman and ask the court not to require me to answer”; “Whatever he said concerning the matter, was said to me in the confessional as a priest”; “I talked with him about the matter only in my professional capacity as a priest and confessor”; “I did not speak to him about the matter except in my confidential capacity as priest;” or a similar statement that sets up the clergyman’s privilege without giving facts. A clergyman should not say: “He confessed it to me,” or “He told it to me in confession,” or give any other answer that implies what was said in confession, as jurors are always watching for a hint of what was said. Neither should the priest say, “I refuse to answer,” without stating that he refuses because of his privilege as a clergy-

¹Owens v. Frank, 7 Wyoming, 457; 53 Pac., 282; 47 Cen. L. J., 221.

man. The trial judge or the attorneys trying the case may put proper questions to determine whether the information was given the witness in the confessional or in his capacity as confessor.²

223. *Admissions, False Statements.*—Admissions or statements made to a clergyman not in his capacity of confidential adviser or in the course of discipline, are not privileged.³ Neither are false statements made to a committee investigating charges; but all statements made to such a committee or an officer of the church, unless false and made with malice, are privileged.⁴

224. *Anonymous Letter, Clergyman.*—Where a priest received an anonymous letter alleged to have been written by a defendant, which he read to her, he was not disqualified from testifying that she was excited and that she stated she had no idea how the fire started, and that the letter was unknown to her, etc.⁵ The mere fact that a communication is made to a clergyman does not make it privileged. It is privileged only when made in confidence of the relation and under such circumstances as to imply that it should forever remain a secret in the

²Evidence, Jones, vol. iii, p. 776.

³Gillooley v. State, 58 Ind., 182.

⁴Knight v. Lee, 80 Ind., 201.

⁵Colbert v. State, 125 Wis., 423; 104 N. W., 61.

breast of the confidential adviser.⁶ When a matter is privileged, it is not left to the witness whether or not he shall testify concerning it; but he can not testify without the consent of the other party.⁷

225. *Voire Dire*.—Where a priest made a preliminary examination of a woman to ascertain her mental capacity to make a confession, her answers in such preliminary examination were admissible in a contest on a will; but her confession was not admissible.⁸

226. *England, Confession*.—The rule is now accorded priests in England, but was not formerly. Where a priest turned a watch over to its owner, the court ordered him, under pain of contempt, to tell where he got the watch.⁹ But in another case it was held that a priest need not divulge the confession of a defendant who was held for crime.¹⁰

227. *United States, Rules*.—In the United States courts, the rule prevails that such confidential communications to a priest shall not be divulged.¹¹

⁶Hills v. State, 61 Neb., 589; 85 N. W., 836.

⁷Bevins v. Kline, 21 Ind., 37.

⁸In re Thomas, 54 Cal., 509.

⁹Rex. v. Hoy, 2 F. & F., 4.

¹⁰Rex. v. Griffen, 6 Cox, C. C., 219.

¹¹Mutual v. Robinson, 19 U. S. App., 266; State v. Morgan, 196 Mo., 177; 95 S. W., 402.

228. *Presumptions, Usage.*—The usage of a church or the laws of its organization as a religious society, if they are to be considered in deciding legal controversies, must be proved as facts.¹² In the absence of proof, it will be presumed that subordinate bodies, as congregations, can not dissolve their connection with the principal organization without permission.¹³

229. *Funeral Expenses.*—Witnesses' opinions as to the reasonable amount for burial or as to the cost of a funeral being reasonable, are not binding on a court or jury. The station of a man, the property that he leaves, the life that he has followed, all should be considered by the court. The whims and notions of societies and others are of minor consideration. Those who make funeral expenses that are not allowed by the court must pay them.¹⁴

¹²¹⁷Katzer v. City, 104 Wis., 16; 79 N. W., 745; 80 N. W., 41.

¹³Vasconcellos v. Ferrara, 27 Ill., 237.

¹⁴Foley v. Brocksmit, 119 Ia., 457; 93 N. W., 344; 97 Am. St. R., 324; 60 L. R. A., 571; 18 Cyc., 437-9.

CHAPTER XIX

CONTRACTS

230. *Business, Religious Service.*—A church organization has the legal right to make any contract concerning its own affairs that is not prohibited by its by-laws or its charter, subject to all laws of legal contracts in the business world. When the consideration is a religious service duly performed, there seems to be no objection to it. Therefore, a minister may collect for preaching a sermon, attending the sick, or saying prayers, or performing any other religious service. But an incorporated church has no authority to enter into a contract for an ulterior purpose, such as the employment of a vessel for the purpose of an excursion.¹

231. *Incorporated Body.*—The only way a religious society that is incorporated can make a contract is by a vote of the aggregate body or of the board of trustees, or through an agent authorized by a vote of one body or the other.²

¹Harriman v. First, 63 Ga., 186.

²Methodist v. Sherman, 36 Wis., 404.

232. *Mortgage, Deficiency Judgment.*—Where a mortgage had been foreclosed against church property before the congregation was incorporated, a deficiency judgment can not be rendered against such church corporation.³ But where a congregation was incorporated after a debt had been incurred and took charge of the property, it assumed the debt.⁴

233. *Building Contracts.*—The taking part in a meeting by voting and appointing committees to make contracts will bind those taking part in all contracts made in accordance with the directions of such meeting. In some States the individuals are held only to the amount that each subscribes, but in other States each individual is liable for the entire debt.⁵

234. *Individual Promise, Subscriptions, Signature.*—An individual promise to give a donation to charity, can not be enforced.⁶ But subscriptions to build a church or other charitable institution or to pay the salary of a clergyman when signed by more than one person, have been held binding in some

³St. Patrick's v. Daly, 116 Ill., 76; 4 N. E., 241.

⁴Eager v. Inhabitants, 10 Mass., 430.

⁵Barnes v. Perrine, 9 Barb., N. Y., 202; Sheehy v. Blake, 77 Wis., 394; 46 N. W., 537; 69 L. R. A., 255; Cutler v. Thomas, 25 Vt., 13; Allen v. M. E. Church, 127 Ia., 96; 102 N. W., 808; 69 L. R. A., 255 Note.

⁶9 Cyc, 331.

cases on the disputed rule of a-promise-for-a-promise consideration.⁷ In the foregoing cases the donor might revoke his subscription or in case of his death his estate would not be liable.⁸ However, when expenses have been made or steps taken in the carrying out of the object of the subscriptions, the general rule is that the subscriptions become binding contracts.⁹ If the object of the subscriptions be abandoned or changed without the consent of the subscriber, he is thereby released. A promissory note given for the subscription, unless negotiated for value in due course of trade, does not change the foregoing rules.¹⁰ Where many persons subscribed to build a church and some of them failed to pay, one who paid brought an action on behalf of himself and others and collected the unpaid subscriptions.¹¹ The defendant Nalty signed "Nalty Family, \$1,000," but he was held personally liable.¹²

235. *Special Purpose, Suit.*—When money is subscribed for a special purpose, as for rebuilding a church, it belongs to the

⁷45 Cent. Dig., 7.

⁸45 Cent. Dig., 38.

⁹45 Cent. Dig., 14.

¹⁰45 Cent. Dig., 1-54; Am. & Eng. Ency. of Law, "Subscriptions."

¹¹Legal Maxims, Broom, 745; *Hodges v. Nalty*, 104 Wis., 464; 80 N. W., 726.

¹²*Hodges v. Nalty*, 113 Wis., 557; 89 N. W., 535; *Hodges v. O'Brien*, 113 Wis., 97; 88 N. W., 901.

church organization; and in a suit to recover the money the action should be brought in the name of the corporation, if incorporated, and if not incorporated it should be brought in the name of the interested party.¹³

236. *Promise, Consideration.*—A promise made by the owner of land to a trustee for the benefit of a religious society, that he would convey the land to such society if it would build a church thereon, is a good and lawful consideration; and after work was begun on the church, the contract was enforceable in a court of equity.¹⁴

¹³Barnes v. Perine, 9 Bar., N. Y., 202.

¹⁴Macon v. Shepard, 2 Humphrey, Tenn., 335.

CHAPTER XX

PEWS

237. *Sold, Rented.*—Prior to the Reformation pews were not sold nor rented and every member had the right to sit wherever he pleased in the body of the church. After the Reformation, the ordinary or bishop was granted the right of “faculty” to rent or sell pews.¹

238. *Incorporeal Hereditament.*—The English title in a pew is in the nature of a right of way through another’s land; it is an incorporeal hereditament. In the absence of express law, the title to pews in this country is said to be in the nature of real estate, and in fact not very different from the English title.² In some States the title is made personal property by statute.³ And in others the courts have inquired into the law of the church and adjudged the title accordingly.⁴ The general rule is that

¹O’Hear v. De Goesbriand, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

²Bates v. Sperrell, 10 Mass., 323; Hodges v. Green, 28 Vt., 358; Pres. v. Andrus, 21 N. J. L., 225.

³Church v. Wells, 24 Pa., 249.

⁴O’Hear v. De Goesbriand, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

the owner of a pew simply has an easement.⁵

239. *Catholic Church, Pew Rights.*—In the Catholic Church, by the canon law, the ownership in or control over a pew is forbidden to laymen. Notwithstanding that, if the party holding the title violates the rule of the church by giving a deed to the pewholder, the courts would probably sustain his title.⁶ However, as the clergy can neither rent nor sell pews without becoming subject to the law of the land and the jurisdiction of our courts, it is important to know what the law of the State is.

240. *Land, Use, Rent Pews.*—Where land was conveyed in trust to the bishop of a diocese and his successors for the erection of a church for the use of a congregation, the right to rent pews vested under the deed and laws of the Catholic Church in the parish priest and not in the trustees afterward elected, as the parish priest was the agent of the bishop.⁷

241. *Trustees, Sale in Perpetuity.*—Without authority of law the trustees of a

⁵*Proprietors v. Roswell*, 66 Me., 400; *Sohier v. Trinity*, 109 Mass., 1; *Aylward v. O'Brien*, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206.

⁶*Aylward v. O'Brien*, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206; *O'Hear v. De Goesbriand*, 33 Vt., 593; 80 Am. Dec., 662.

⁷*Smith v. Bonhoff*, 2 Mich., 115.

church can not make an absolute sale in perpetuity of a pew without any reservation of rent.⁸ The sale of a pew in a church will be determined in a case according to the particular facts.⁹

242. *Pew, Right to Occupy, Conditions.*

—A grant of a church pew in perpetuity does not give the owner an absolute right of property as a grant of land in fee; but gives only a right to sit therein, although he may maintain an action in court for protection of his rights.¹⁰ In Vermont a pewholder has only the right to occupy his seat during religious services and holds it subject to the superior right of the society owning the pew.¹¹ A condition in the deed to a pew that a holder about to leave the congregation shall offer it to the society for a certain price, is not invalid.¹² Where a pewholder held his pew by a certain agreement and after the church had been remodeled he bought a different pew, the conditions attached to the first pew did not apply to the last.¹³ Pews owned by the occupant pass to the heirs as real estate instead of

⁸*Vorhees v. Presbyterian*, 8 Barb., 135.

⁹*Price v. Lyon*, 14 Conn., 280.

¹⁰*Baptist v. Witherell*, 3 Paige, N. Y., 296; 24 Am. Dec., 223.

¹¹*Perrin v. Granger*, 33 Vt., 101.

¹²*French v. Old*, 106 Mass., 479.

¹³*Curry v. First*, 2 Pittsburg, 105.

going to the executors as personal property in States where the title is in the nature of the title to real estate.¹⁴

243. Tax, Assessment.—A tax assessed upon the pew of a religious corporation in part for purposes not specifically named in a deed of the pew, which alone gives the power to make such an assessment and which strictly defines and limits such power, is invalid *in toto*.¹⁵ The right to make an assessment on pews must be founded upon law, else it can not be enforced.¹⁶ When a congregation sells pews at auction rent free for the purpose of building a church, it has no power thereafter to assess the pews for the salary of the minister.¹⁷

244. Pewholders' Rights.—A pewholder has the exclusive right to occupy his pew when the house is used for the purpose for which it was erected; but he can not convert his pew to other purposes not contemplated.¹⁸ If he has paid his pew-rent according to agreement, he is entitled to use his pew on all occasions when the house is occupied, even when it is open for purposes different from those mentioned in the con-

¹⁴Succession of Gambla, 23 La. Ann., 9.

¹⁵First v. Braydon, 91 Mass., 248.

¹⁶Downs v. Bowdoin, 149 Mass., 135; 21 N. E., 294.

¹⁷Trustees v. Quackenbush, 10 Johnson, 217.

¹⁸Kellogg v. Dickenson, 18 Vt., 266.

veyance thereof; and he has the right to exclude all others from his pew by fastening the door or otherwise, and any one who enters his pew knowing the facts, is a trespasser and liable to an action for damages.¹⁹ The owner of a pew has no right to put an offensive covering thereon nor use his pew in any way to the annoyance of the congregation or not in keeping with the place and conditions. By placing anything offensive about his pew, he may be liable for maintaining a nuisance, and such offensive thing may be removed; but, as far as possible, it must be removed without damaging the pewholder's property.²⁰

245. *Rebuilding, Remodeling.*—An injunction was granted on the bill of pewholders, restraining the authorities of the church from pulling it down, as they were going to use the materials in the erection of a new church on a different site. On the answer, the injunction was dissolved on the ground that if the complainants had rights which would be violated, there was a remedy at law and that the nature and extent of the injury were not such as called for the interposition of

¹⁹Jackson v. Rounsville, 5 Metcalf, Mass., 127.

²⁰Murray v. Cargill, 32 Me., 517; Gay v. Baker, 17 Mass., 435; Shaw v. Beveridge, 3 Hill, N. Y., 26; Perrin v. Granger, 33 Vt., 101.

a court of equity by injunction.²¹ Where a parish abandons an old church and builds a new one it does not become liable to any pewholder for damages by reason thereof unless it has acted wantonly or intentionally to injure the pewholder.²² But when it becomes necessary for the purpose of repairing or remodeling a church, to destroy old pews, a pew built by a member under contract with the church can not be removed or destroyed without compensation.²³ Pew rights are subject to the right of the parish to pull down and rebuild a church either as a matter of necessity or expediency, but in the latter case the owner of a pew is entitled to payment.²⁴ A pewholder has only the right to occupy his pew during public worship, and when the church has become so out of repair that it can not be used for public worship, the owner of a pew can recover only nominal damages for injuries to his pew.²⁵

246. *Selling Pew on Execution.*—In an action to recover the value of a pew sold at auction, the merits of the case will be tried according to the law of the land.²⁶ It is

²¹*Vanhorn v. Tallmadge*, 8 N. J. Eq., 108.

²²*Fassett v. Boylston*, 19 Pickering, Mass., 361.

²³*Kimball v. Rowley*, 24 Pickering, Mass., 347.

²⁴*Aylward v. O'Brien*, 160 Mass., 118; 35 N. E., 313; 22 L. R. A., 206; *Van Houten v. Trustees*, 17 N. J. Eq., 126.

²⁵*Howard v. Stevens*, 47 Vt., 262.

²⁶*Stoddard v. Vestry*, 2 Gill. & J., Md., 227.

Free Church, Seats, Lease **247-248]**

doubtful whether a pew in a church can be sold for private debts of the pewholder.²⁷ It depends somewhat upon the title and State law of exemptions.²⁸ To render an attachment of a pew valid, it is not necessary for the officer to come in sight of the pew or even to enter the church.²⁹

247. *Members, Pew.*—Members of the congregation may be required to pay for a pew or sitting in the church, and where a priest ejected a member from the church because he would not rent a pew, he was sustained by the court.³⁰

248. *Free Church, Seats, Lease.*—The trustees of a free church may assign seats and forcibly remove one from a seat without authority.³¹ Where a pew is real estate, a pewholder may acquire the right to it by prescription in the usual way.³² Where pews are not rented and the members support the church by voluntary subscriptions, they have equal right to the occupancy of the pews. But where the church builds the pews and rents them, a man paying rent for a pew holds it under lease in the nature of a lease to real estate. However, he does

²⁷*City v. McIntyre*, 8 Rob., La., 467.

²⁸*Sargent v. Pierce*, 43 Mass., 80.

²⁹*Perrin v. Leverett*, 13 Mass., 128.

³⁰*Crowley v. Miller*, 19 N. Y. Weekly Dig., 262.

³¹*Sheldon v. Vail*, 28 Hun., 354.

³²*Price v. Lyons*, 14 Conn., 280.

not obtain all the rights of a lessee of land, and in many cases a rule of the church governs the holding of pews, which will be observed by the State courts.³³

249. *Executors, Pew-Rent.*—The executors of a pew owner are not bound to pay pew-rent accrued after the owner's death.

250. *Voting, Pew-Rent, Arrears.*—Where a church is incorporated and by its charter or the laws of the State it has authority to make reasonable by-laws, a by-law which prohibits any person from voting whose pew-rent is in arrears for more than two years, is valid.³⁴

³³Perrin v. Granger, 33 Vt., 101.

³⁴Commonwealth v. Cain, 5 Srg. & R., Pa., 510.

CHAPTER XXI

PROPERTY

251. *Unincorporated, Trustee.*—The question whether an unincorporated religious society may take a gift or devise, is determined by the law of domicile.¹ Generally an unincorporated religious association can not hold property in its assumed name, but it must be held by conveyance in trust to a trustee named.²

252. *Charter, By-Laws.*—When the charter or by-laws of a church corporation provide that they may be altered, such changes may, after the execution and delivery of a deed, immediately adhere to the title.³

253. *Suits, Corporation, Members.*—Cases may occur in which the corporation in its corporate capacity, or the society in its collective capacity, may be a plaintiff or a defendant in a suit between it and one or

¹In re Bullock, 6 Dem. Sur., 335; Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276; Ruth v. Oberbrunner, 40 Wis., 238.

²Ruth v. Oberbrunner, 40 Wis., 238; Goesele v. Bimeler, 55 U. S., 589; 14 L. Ed., 554; Van Houten v. Trustees, 17 N. J. Eq., 126.

³Winnetoesaukee v. Gordon, 63 N. H., 505; 3 At., 426.

more members of the religious society in their individual capacity or in their collective capacity, in a quasi-conspiracy or concerning other torturous acts, or a collective contract.⁴

254. *Deed, Court, Title.*—A deed made in pursuance of an order of a court having jurisdiction passes good title.⁵

255. *Subscription, Lots.*—Any one may convey title to a church as his part of the subscription by merely marking it on a plat made by him, as lots donated to such church.⁶

256. *Misnomer, Identity.*—The misnomer of a religious society or corporation will not invalidate a mortgage where the identity of the society can be clearly shown.⁷

257. *Adverse Possession, Color of Title.*—A religious corporation may obtain title to land by adverse possession. The length of such possession is determined by the laws of the State, the usual period being twenty years.⁸ Unless the laws of the State require it, color of title at the time of asserting adverse possession need not be shown.⁹

⁴*Bethel v. Carmack*, 2 Md., Ch., 143; *Tartar v. Gibbs*, 24 Md., 323.

⁵*Lynch v. Pfeiffer*, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402.

⁶*Enos v. Chestnut*, 88 Ill., 590.

⁷*Walwrath v. Camel*, 28 Mich., 111.

⁸*Harpending v. Reformed*, 41 U. S., 455; 10 L. Ed., 1029.

⁹*Inhabitants v. Catholics*, 40 Mass., 139; *People v. Trinity*, 22 N. Y., 44.

Mortgage, Bishop, Debts 258-261

258. Sale, Restrictions.—In some States when not restricted by the laws of the organization the parish corporation may sell the premises in order to pay the church debts. However, it is not a common law right.¹⁰

259. Deed.—A deed to “The Evangelical Order of Christians” was sufficiently definite for a valid conveyance.¹¹

260. Error.—A clerical error in the name of the grantee will not make a deed void. However, when such error has been discovered, it should be corrected.¹²

261. Mortgage, Bishop, Debts.—The archbishop of a church to which property is bequeathed, can not mortgage it without authority from the church or under the law.¹³ Also, the bishop of a diocese to whom land had been conveyed in trust for a particular congregation, could not execute a valid mortgage thereon to secure his own indebtedness.¹⁴ But a religious society in the absence of prohibitory legislation, has power to mortgage its property to secure its debts.¹⁵

¹⁰Lynch v. Pfeiffer, 110 N. Y., 33; 17 N. E., 402; Eggleston v. Doolittle, 33 Conn., 396.

¹¹Tomlin v. Blunt, 31 Ill. App., 234.

¹²Centenary v. Parker, 43 N. J. Eq., 307; 12 At., 142.

¹³Levasseur v. Martin, 11 La. Ann., 684.

¹⁴O'Donnell v. Holden, 21 Weekly Law Bulletin, 254.

¹⁵Walwrath v. Camel, 28 Mich., 111.

262. *Deed, Trust, Fee.*—A deed of land to a Catholic bishop and his heirs and assigns forever in trust for a Catholic parish for the purpose of a free burial ground, gave the bishop an estate in fee.¹⁶

263. *Debts, Creditors.*—A committee of a religious society authorized to sell lands to raise money to pay its general debts, is not authorized to execute a mortgage for the purpose of securing various creditors holding claims; and the defect in such mortgage is not cured by a vote at a subsequent meeting to which the committee made a report of its action.¹⁷

264. *Mortgage or Sale, Notice, Consent.*—Whenever there is to be a mortgage or sale of the church property, if it is to be done by the corporation, it must be done strictly in accordance with the charter and laws of the corporation, and if those do not provide therefor, every member should receive a reasonable notice to attend a meeting of the congregation and the question should be submitted to such meeting and a vote taken thereon. If all the proceedings are regular and the proper officers (president and secretary) of the corporation be author-

¹⁶Fitzpatrick v. Fitzgerald, 79 Mass., 400.

¹⁷Hubbard v. German, 34 Ia., 31.

ized to make a conveyance, it is good in law.¹⁸ However, if the irregular acts of officers or members of a congregation are subsequently ratified in a lawful manner, they become binding.¹⁹ When consent of the court is required, it must be obtained.²⁰

265. *Title, Taxes, Judicial Notice.*—If the title is in the bishop in fee in accordance with church law it is not “owned by any religious association” and is liable for taxes. The laws of the Catholic Church are not the subject of judicial notice, but must be alleged and proved as any other fact.²¹

266. *Title, Diocese, Rule.*—Where the title to the property of the diocese was in the bishop for the use of the church and subsequently the diocese was incorporated, the bishop was not divested of title and it was still necessary to have the property conveyed by deed.²² In some other States, however, the contrary rule prevails.²³

267. *Priest, Deed, Funds.*—Where it was claimed that a priest purchased lands and took the deed in his own name and paid

¹⁸In re First, 106 N. Y., 251; 12 N. E., 626; Wiswell v. First, 14 Ohio St., 31.

¹⁹Scott v. First, 50 Mich., 528; 15 N. W., 891.

²⁰In re First, 106 N. Y., 251; 12 N. E., 626.

²¹Katzer v. City of Milwaukee, 104 Wis., 16; 79 N. W., 745; 80 N. W., 41.

²²Beckwith v. St. Phillip's Parish, 69 Ga., 564.

²³Miller v. Chittenden, 2 Ia., 315; 4 Ia., 252; Schenectady v. Veeder, 4 Wendell, N. Y., 494.

therefor with funds belonging to the congregation, the conveyance will not be decreed by the court only upon the clearest and most satisfactory evidence.²⁴

268. *Monks, Missions, Title.*—The fact that the monks or priests were at the head of the missions in California when it was acquired by the United States, does not prove that the Catholic Church had universal ownership of the property.²⁵ The acts of Congress giving the city of San Antonio authority to sell public lands, was intended, no doubt, to dispose of mission property, but it was held not to affect the Catholic Church, the title to which had been confirmed by another act of Congress.²⁶

269. *Texan Revolution, Land.*—At the time of the Texan Revolution, a Catholic church held no real estate of perfect title, but enjoyed only the use of the land that it possessed and continued so to occupy after the admission of Texas into the Union.²⁷

270. *Priest, Agent, Deed.*—The priest in charge of a congregation is the agent of the archbishop, and where the title to the real estate is conveyed by absolute deed to the bishop, the congregation, against the

²⁴St. Patrick's v. Daly, 116 Ill., 76.

²⁵Nobilli v. Redman, 6 Cal., 325.

²⁶San Antonio v. Odin, 15 Tex., 539.

²⁷Blair v. Odin, 3 Tex., 288.

protest of the priest and without obtaining leave from the bishop, has no right to tear down a church for the purpose of rebuilding or repairing it.²⁸ And a priest in charge of mission property may maintain in his name an action to recover its possession.²⁹

271. *Devise, Uncertainty.*—A devise of property “to the Roman Catholic Orphans” of a certain diocese, making the bishop of the diocese executor of the will and giving him power to sell the property and use the proceeds for the benefit of the Roman Catholic orphans, is void for uncertainty.³⁰

272. *Donor, Ambiguous Provision.*—The religious convictions of the donor may be shown for the purpose of construing an ambiguous provision of a deed or will.³¹

273. *Trust, Evidence.*—Without any trust being declared in writing, parol evidence can not be allowed to prove that the Catholic Church and parsonage is held in trust for the congregation by the bishop of the diocese, notwithstanding that the moneys for purchasing the lands and putting up such buildings were collected by subscriptions and contributions made to the priest in charge under the law, usage, and

²⁸Heiss v. Vosburg, 59 Wis., 532; 18 N. W., 463.

²⁹Santillan v. Moses, 1 Cal., 92.

³⁰Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276.

³¹Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

polity of the Roman Catholic Church.³² At common law land may be granted to pious uses before there is a grantee to take it. In the meantime, the title is in abeyance.³³ Where the title to parsonage lands is in the minister as a sole corporation, on his death the title remains in abeyance until a successor is appointed.³⁴

274. Money, Control.—Money raised by a Catholic congregation for the purpose of building a church does not come under the absolute control of the bishop or priest, although put into the hands of the latter for safe keeping. It is subject to the control of the congregation, although the members of the congregation refused to obey the command of the bishop of the diocese to consolidate with another church to which the priest was removed.³⁵

275. Church, Building, Removing.—Where subscriptions were secured to build a church at a particular place as a memorial to a certain person, a congregation may be enjoined from tearing down the building and removing it to another place.³⁶ But a court of equity will not prevent the removal

³²Hennessey v. Walsh, 55 N. H., 515.

³³Pawlet v. Clarke, 13 U. S., 292; 3 L. Ed., 735.

³⁴Cheever v. Pierson, 33 Mass., 266.

³⁵Amish v. Gelhaus, 71 Ia., 170; 32 N. W., 318.

³⁶Cushman v. Church, 162 Pa., 280; 29 At., 472.

of a church where a majority of the congregation favors it, although a legal meeting had not been held to determine the matter.³⁷

276. Church, Use, Division.—A church guild that erected a building adjoining a church for parish purposes, with the assent of the congregation, can not deny the authority of the church and use the building for other purposes.³⁸ But if members are improperly excluded from the use of the church property they must appeal to the courts for redress and can not resort to acts of trespass to gain entrance into a church.³⁹ A court of equity will compel persons having charge of the temporalities of a church, whether incorporated or not, to faithfully perform their trust and to prevent the diversion of the property from its original purposes. The court will not interfere in strictly religious matters.⁴⁰

277. Spanish Territory.—When Alabama was a part of Spanish territory, a deed of land “to His Catholic Majesty for the

³⁷Kulinsky v. Dambrowski, 29 Wis., 109.

³⁸Reed v. Church, 6 Pa. Co. Ct., 76.

³⁹Fulbright v. Higgenbotham, 133 Mo., 668; 34 S. W., 875; People v. Runkel, 9 Johnson, 147; Central v. Patterson, 30 N. Y. Supp., 248; Unangst v. Shortz, 5 Horton, Pa., 506.

⁴⁰Bowden v. MacLeod, 1 Edw., N. Y., 588; Gable v. Miller, 10 Paige, N. Y., 627; Wilson v. Johns, 2 Rich., S. C., Eq., 192; Ferrara v. Vasconcellos, 31 Ill., 25.

purpose of building thereon a parochial church and dwelling-house for the officiating priest," the money being paid out of the royal treasury, did not constitute the King of Spain a trustee for the church or transfer to the church in equity a title to the lots.⁴¹

278. *Trust, Purposes, Doctrines.*—When a conveyance of a lot is made to certain persons of a religious society and their successors in trust for religious purposes, all the members become beneficiaries in equal degree notwithstanding some of them may have contributed larger sums than others.⁴² Land conveyed to a church for valuable consideration belongs to the church, whatever change may take place in its religious doctrines; and if a minority secedes on the ground that they are the ones who retain the original tenets of the church, they can not take with them either the whole or pro rata share of the church property.⁴³

279. *Control, Revenues.*—The trustees of a corporation of a church or of a religious society have entire control over the revenues of such body.⁴⁴

⁴¹*Antones v. Eslava's heirs*, 9 Port., 527.

⁴²*Ferraria v. Vasconcellos*, 31 Ill., 25; *Brunnenmeyer v. Buhre*, 32 Ill., 183.

⁴³*Organ v. Seaford*, 1 Dev., N. C. Eq., 453; *Post* 290, 319.

⁴⁴*Gram v Prussia*, 36 N. Y., 161; *Reformed v. Draper*, 97 Mass., 349.

280. *Leave to Purchase, Title, Canons of the Church.*—A congregation wanted to buy a church and priest's house, but the archbishop refused leave to purchase, but granted permission to keep the premises for religious purposes for a time. The members formed a society and bought and took title in the name of the "Lithuanian Benefit Society of St. Anthony." Then the archbishop wrote them a letter requiring the deed of the premises to be put in his name, which the congregation refused to do. A part of the congregation brought a suit in equity to enforce the transfer from the society to the archbishop. The court held that if the congregation was under the church and acknowledged its authority, the title must be settled by the canons of the church; otherwise, the majority of the congregation, in a duly called meeting, should determine where the title should be vested.⁴⁵

281. *Cemetery, Authority.*—When a congregation that had title to a cemetery for many years entrusted the management and sale of the lots to the priest, he had thereby authority to create servitudes, such as alleys to lots, which become binding on the congregation and all third persons.⁴⁶

⁴⁵Dochkus v. Lithuanian, 206 Pa., 25; 55 At., 779.

⁴⁶Burke v. Wall, 29 La. Ann., 38.

282. Real Estate, Purpose.—A church has no power to acquire and hold real estate for any purpose other than that of promoting the object of its creation, and any contract entered into for a purchase of real estate as a matter of speculation is *ultra vires* and void.⁴⁷

283. Limitation, Lands.—A statute of the State prohibiting a religious society from holding more than twenty acres, applies to a single parish or congregation and not to the entire denomination when it consists of more than one congregation.⁴⁸

284. Conditions, Bequest, Deed, Time.—Where property has been devised for a particular purpose or on certain conditions attached thereto, the law may be invoked to protect the fund according to the bequest.⁴⁹ And where a deed contained a clause that the lots should never be sold nor used in any other way except for the benefit of a specified Protestant Church, although the deed contained no clause of forfeiture, when the congregation sold the property the grantor was entitled to have the deed set aside and the title re-vested in himself.⁵⁰ And a grant

⁴⁷Thompson v. West, 59 Neb., 677; 82 N. W., 13; 49 L. R. A., 337.

⁴⁸Morgan v. Leslie, Wright, O., 144.

⁴⁹Consistory v. Brandow, 52 Barb., N. Y., 228.

⁵⁰Grisson v. Hill, 17 Ark., 483.

Condition, Quit-Claim 285-286]

made upon condition that a church be erected thereon, prevents the grantee from conveying it for other purposes without the consent of the grantor or his heirs.⁵¹ But where a devise was made on condition that a church be built on the property within three years, the provision being a condition subsequent, a court has the right to extend the time.⁵²

285. *Will, Forfeiture.*—The provision in a will or deed that land shall be used for purposes of a certain church, may create a trust for the benefit of the church only and not a condition the breach of which would work a forfeiture.⁵³ When a condition is put in a deed that it shall be forever used as a burial ground for the interment of bodies, it is doubtful whether the grantor and grantee together may change the uses of the property. Therefore, it is important in taking deeds to cemeteries to have no condition whatever, unless such conditions are desired.⁵⁴

286. *Condition, Quit-Claim.*—After conveying land upon a specified condition, the grantor then gave a quit-claim deed, and the

⁵¹Scott v. Stipe, 12 Ind., 74; Mills v. Davison, 54 N. J. Eq., 659; 35 At., 1072; 35 L. R. A., 113.

⁵²Appeal of Tappen, 52 Conn., 412.

⁵³Neely v. Hoskins, 84 Me., 386; 24 At., 882.

⁵⁴Second v. Dugan, 65 Md., 460; 5 At., 415.

court held that that relieved the grant from the condition.⁵⁵

287. *Bishop, Trust, Successors.*—A deed of land to the bishop of a church for a Protestant Episcopal church in fee simple, created a trust and on the death of such bishop the title passed to his successors.⁵⁶ Where a grantee in a deed absolute on its face, is in fact archbishop of the Roman Catholic Church for his diocese, its canons and decrees regulating the mode of acquiring and holding church property are competent evidence to show that the property is so held in trust for purposes for public worship and other charitable uses. And property so held by a Catholic bishop in trust for the diocese, or in trust for a congregation, school, cemetery, or asylum, for the separate use of each, is not chargeable with any part of the expenses of another one or for improving the church property generally in the diocese.⁵⁷

288. *Trustees, Vacancy.*—When land is conveyed to certain persons as trustees of a church and their successors lawfully appointed, a court of equity will not step in to fill a vacancy but will leave that to be filled

⁵⁵Craig v. Inhabitants, 58 Me., 479.

⁵⁶Beckwith v. St. Phillip's Church, 68 Ga., 564.

⁵⁷Mannix v. Purcell, 46 Ohio St., 102; 19 N. E., 572; 2 L. R. A., 753.

Title, Harmony, Division **289–290]**

by the church in accordance with its discipline.⁵⁸ But an attempt to sell real estate of a religious society against the provisions of its charter, will be prevented by a court of equity.⁵⁹

289. *Church, Majority, Change.*—When property is conveyed to a church having a well-known doctrine, faith, and practice, a majority of the members has not the authority or power by reason of a change of religious views to carry the property thus dedicated to a new and different doctrine.⁶⁰

290. *Title, Harmony, Division.*—The title to church property in a divided congregation is in that part of the congregation which acts in harmony with the law of the denomination; and the ecclesiastical laws and principles which were accepted among them before the dispute began, are the standard for determining which party is right.⁶¹ In other cases the division of church property, where there is a division of the congregation, depends upon its particular facts.⁶² Where \$400 was bequeathed to a Lutheran

⁵⁸Draper v. Minor, 36 Mo., 290.

⁵⁹Burton's Appeal, 57 Pa. St., 213.

⁶⁰Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 361; 33 N. E., 777; 44 N. E., 363; 32 L. R. A., 838.

⁶¹Free Ch. of Scotland v. Overton, Appeal Cases, House of Lords, 1904; McGinnis v. Watson, 41 Pa. St., 9; Ante, 278.

⁶²First v. Rauss, 21 Conn., 160; Watson v. Jones, 13 Wallace, 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

congregation in S——, there being at the time of the making of the will but one Lutheran congregation in the place, but subsequently a majority of the trustees and members with the pastor left the church and built a new one, the old church continued vested with the title to the property and all its funds.⁶³

291. *Perversion, Misuse, Suit.*—Unless there is substantial departure from the purpose of the trust which amounts to a perversion of it, a court of equity will not interfere to prevent the misuse or abuse of a trust of a religious nature. In actions in the State court, if the church is not incorporated, an action should be brought in the names of the members collectively, and if they are too numerous to be all named, the suit may be brought in the name of one or more of them for the whole. The same rules apply to religious societies when sued. However, in some dioceses, particularly in the Catholic Church, the title to the church property is in the bishop and he thereby becomes an interested party who must be made either a plaintiff or a defendant.⁶⁴

292. *Rights, Contracts, Torts, Crimes.*—Vested property rights, contracts, torts,

⁶³App. v. Lutheran, 6 Pa. St., 201.

⁶⁴Keller v. Tracy, 11 Ia., 530; Happy v. Morton, 33 Ill., 398; Leftwig v. Thornton, 18 Ia., 56.

and crimes, are usually subject to the laws of the State and the control and judgment of a church tribunal is seldom final. While the State courts have no ecclesiastical jurisdiction and can not revise or question ordinary acts of church discipline, they have the power to adjudicate conflicting claims of parties to the church property or the use of it.⁶⁵

293. Cemetery, Assessments.—Where a lot was bought for the purpose of building a church but was used for a cemetery, and a church was built at another place and the deed to the lot was taken in the name of the trustees, the pastor and a member of the church corporation were not the proper parties to bring an action to restrain the State from selling the lot to pay the assessments for pavement, as they had no legal or equitable interest for the protection of which they could claim the interposition of a court of equity.⁶⁶

294. Burned, Revert, Vested.—The fact that a church on lands donated to the parish, on condition of sustaining the church, burned down, the title did not revert to the grantor's heirs.⁶⁷ Also land granted a bishop for church uses, vested immediately in him

⁶⁵Watson v. Jones, 13 Wallace, 679; 20 L. Ed., 666.

⁶⁶Dolan v. Mayor, 4 Gill., Md., 394.

⁶⁷Goode v. McPherson, 51 Mo., 126.

and was not forfeited because it was not used for church purposes.⁶⁸

295. *Abandoned, Revert.*—Land granted to trustees and their successors forever in trust to erect a Methodist church, according to its rules and discipline, which was used for such church for a long time and then abandoned and sold to parties who converted it into a blacksmith shop, did not thereupon revert in the absence of a provision to that effect.⁶⁹

296. *Uses and Trusts.*—The chapter of the Wisconsin statutes on religious societies, although not included in the same title as the chapter abolishing all uses and trusts excepting as therein created, was not intended to prohibit the trusts expressly authorized by the former.⁷⁰

297. *Trust Funds, Account.*—Where a member of the church received funds to invest in his own name for the benefit of the church, he will be obliged in a court of equity to give full account for the money and its profits.⁷¹

298. *Fund, Diverted, Split.*—A fund created for a particular purpose, as the education of children in the faith and doctrines

⁶⁸Olcott v. Gabert, 86 Tex., 121; 23 S. W., 985.

⁶⁹Strong v. Doty, 32 Wis., 381.

⁷⁰Fadness v. Braunburg, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84.

⁷¹Weld v. May, 9 Cushing, Mass., 181.

of a denomination at the time the fund is created, can not be diverted from its original object.⁷² Neither can such a fund be split up when a congregation is divided, but must be retained as created.⁷³

299. *Church, Personalty.*—A church removed from its foundation and put on rollers was severed from the realty and became personal property.⁷⁴

300. *Lease, Purposes.*—A religious literary society and scientific corporation has power to lease part of a building owned by it for theatrical and operatic purposes.⁷⁵

301. *Salary, Lien, Equity.*—The church building and the land on which it stands have been held subject to the payment of a debt due for the salary of a pastor of the congregation owning such property.⁷⁶ A contractor is entitled to a lien on the church property for work done on the building.⁷⁷ A person who became liable for the debts of the congregation incurred in the purchase of church property, obtained relief in equity

⁷²Field v. Field, 9 Wendell, N. Y., 394; Stokes v. Dale, 14 N. Y., 901.

⁷³Hendrickson v. Shotwell, 1 N. J. Eq., 577; Calkins v. Cheney, 92 Ill., 463; Park v. Chaplain, 96 Ia., 55; 64 N. W., 674.

⁷⁴Beech v. Allen, 7 Hun., 441.

⁷⁵Catholic v. Gibbons, 3 Weekly Law Bulletin, 581.

⁷⁶Lyons v. Planters, 86 Ga., 485.

⁷⁷African v. Duru, 19 La. Ann., 302; Harrisburg v. Washburn, 29 Oregon, 150; 44 Pac., 390.

by subjecting the church property to a sale.⁷⁸

302. *Bankruptcy, Creditors.*—There is no provision of law for a church corporation to make an assignment in bankruptcy. However, the church corporation may be sued and a receiver appointed to take possession of the property and sequester the assets.⁷⁹ But where assignments in bankruptcy and a sale and conveyance of church property are lawful, the church property may be assigned for the benefit of the creditors.⁸⁰

303. *Jurisdiction, Process.*—In order to obtain jurisdiction where there are contentions between various persons claiming to be officers, the only safe rule is to serve the process on all those who are in the offices or claim the offices upon the occupants of which the papers must be served.⁸¹

304. *States, Property, Restrictions.*—Some States restrict the quantity and use of property that a religious society or church may hold. Other States have no restrictions; but nearly all the States have some statutory law on the subject, which is changed so frequently that it would be use-

⁷⁸Lynn v. Carson, 32 Grat., Va., 170.

⁷⁹Proprietor v. Butler, 56 Mass., 597.

⁸⁰DeRuyter v. St. Peter's, 3 N. Y., 238.

⁸¹Perrian v. Methodist, 4 Abbot's Pr., N. Y., 424; Unangst v. Shortz, 5 Horton, Pa. St., 506; Trustees v. Hoessli, 13 Wis., 348.

less to give the provisions of such law in this work.⁸²

305. Land, Limitation.—A statute of Illinois relating to Catholic societies contains no limitations on property rights, but it was held that the general law applied, and that an organization having ten acres could not acquire additional land by devise. A conveyance of land to a corporation after it has taken all the land allowed by law, is void.⁸³ In Kentucky where a church is limited to fifty acres and a devise was made to a church for the benefit of foreign missions, it was held valid under a statute providing that all devises for relief of aged, impotent, poor people, churches, or for any other charitable or humane purposes, shall be valid.⁸⁴ Maryland's peculiar law by which leave must be obtained from the Legislature for a conveyance of more than two acres of land, has been construed to give the Legislature authority to ratify a conveyance that otherwise would be void under the statute.⁸⁵ Also, it was held in the same case that a church might acquire more land, but that

⁸²Miller v. Chittenden, 2 Ia., 315; Church v. Grace, 68 N. Y., 570; Gilmer v. Stone, 120 U. S., 586; 30 L. Ed., 734; Kinney v. Kinney's Executors, 86 Ky., 610; 6 S. W., 593.

⁸³St. Peter's v. German, 104 Ill., 440.

⁸⁴Kinney v. Kinney's Executors, 86 Ky., 610; 6 S. W., 593.

⁸⁵Trustees v. Manning, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

it would be restricted with regard to its use. A statute prohibiting a religious society from holding more than twenty acres of land applied to a single religious society and not to the denomination.⁸⁶ Where the territorial law provided that no religious corporation should hold real estate of greater value than \$50,000, a receiver was appointed for the Mormon corporation.⁸⁷

306. Corporations, Bequests.—Foreign religious corporations may be entitled to recover bequests made to them in some States; but the general rule is that a foreign religious society has no better right to take property by devise than a domestic corporation.⁸⁸ When the statute requires a conveyance to specify the purpose for which a religious society takes land, the failure to so specify renders the deed void.⁸⁹ But the Young Men's Christian Association was declared not within the limitation because it was not formed for pecuniary benefit and profit and was not under the control of any one denomination nor formed for religious worship.⁹⁰

⁸⁶Morgan v. Leslie, Wright, 144.

⁸⁷U. S. v. Church, 5 Utah, 361; 15 Pac., 473.

⁸⁸In re Ticknor's estate, 13 Mich., 44; Levy v. Levy, 33 N. Y., 97.

⁸⁹Trustees v. Hilkin, 84 Md., 170; 35 At., 9.

⁹⁰Hamsher v. Hamsher, 132 Ill., 273; 23 N. E., 1123; 8 L. R. A., 556.

307. *Collateral Attack*.—A devise of land to a religious society which will increase the title beyond the amount that is allowed by statute, can not be attacked collaterally by a private individual.⁹¹ It is for the State and not for the individual to make inquiry into excess on the part of a religious society in its accumulation.⁹²

⁹¹Hanson v. Little Sisters, 79 Md., 434; 32 At., 1052; Jones v. Habersham, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

⁹²Church v. Grace, 68 N. Y., 570.

CHAPTER XXII

RELIGIOUS SERVICES

308. *Worship, Discipline, Innovations.*—The denomination itself, according to its rules and regulations, determines what services shall form a part of its public worship. The inferior authority in the church has no right to violate the discipline by innovations. Whether or not devotional singing may be accompanied with instrumental music, must be determined by those who administer the discipline of the church.¹

309. *Doctrines, Temporal Affairs.*—The fact that the congregation sells the pews does not give the owners the right to determine what doctrines shall be preached in the church, nor who shall preach them.² A majority of a local church can not change the faith of the church against the protest of the minority.³ The corporation of the congregation is governed by the majority only in temporal affairs.⁴ However, some

¹Tartar v. Gibbs, 24 Md., 323.

²Trinitarian v. Union, 61 N. H., 384.

³Smith v. Pedigo, 145 Ind., 361; 44 N. E., 363; 32 L. R. A., 838.

⁴Miller v. English, 21 N. J. L., 317.

of the Protestant churches are so independent that a vote of the congregation may transfer them from one denomination to another.⁵

310. *Contributions, Presbyterians, Methodists.*—Where certain persons by contributions built a church and the title was taken and held by the Presbyterians who permitted all other denominations to hold services therein, all of which was a condition of the subscriptions for establishing the church, when the Presbyterians sold out to the Methodists and they held it for their own exclusive use, those who contributed the money had the right to resort to the court to enforce their rights to worship in such church.⁶

311. *True Religion, Courts.*—Ordinarily the civil courts do not interfere where there is a question as to which of two or more parties is adhering to the true religious teaching of the denomination. If no question of property or civil rights arises, the court will not interfere.⁷

312. *Heresy, Injunction.*—Where a minister did not preach the doctrine and the entire system of Calvinistic theology received and taught by that denomination, he

⁵Petot v. Tucker, 21 N. Y., 267.

⁶Ludlam v. Higbee, 11 N. J. Eq., 342.

⁷Happy v. Morton, 33 Ill., 398.

[313–314 *Religious Services*

had no right to the pulpit of the church, and the court granted an injunction against his officiating therein.⁸

313. *Bequest, Sects, Condition.*—Where a bequest was made to erect a place of worship with the privilege for other sects to worship therein and forever to be used as such, the trustees in whom the title vested had no authority to sell without the consent of the grantor or his heirs; and the congregation having sold the church property and it having been thereafter used for a store, the grantor's heirs had a right of entry for condition broken.⁹

314. *Sexton, Undertaker, Authorities.*—The sexton who has charge of the church property may lawfully remove from the church an undertaker who, after being warned to desist and leave, persists in conducting the funeral in violation of rules prescribed by the authorities of the church.¹⁰

⁸*Sutor v. Spangler*, 4 Phil., 331.

⁹*Scott v. Stipe*, 12 Ind., 74.

¹⁰*Commonwealth v. Dougherty*, 107 Mass., 243.

CHAPTER XXIII

BEQUESTS, DEVISES, AND GIFTS

315. *Statutes, Wills.*—In some States a religious society can not take under a will, and a bequest of money to a church is void.¹ In Connecticut any devise to a religious corporation not expressly authorized by statute, is void.² In Maryland leave to devise land to a religious society must be obtained from the Legislature.³ In all the States it is safest to consult and carefully follow the statute in drawing a will.

316. *Masses, Alabama.*—Formerly as a rule of the English common law, it was held that bequests and devises for the purpose of having Masses said for the soul of the deceased, were void as superstitious uses; but under Article 1 of the Amendments to the United States Constitution, and under similar provisions in the constitutions of the several States, the English rule does not prevail in the United States. However, Ala-

¹In *re Wright's estate*, Myr. Prob., 213 Cal.

²*Green v. Dennis*, 6 Conn., 293; *Ferguson v. Hedges*, 1 Harr., 524.

³*Murphy v. Dallam*, 1 Bland, 529.

[317-318 *Bequests, Devises, and Gifts*

bama adopted the English rule.⁴ By reading the foot-note to the Alabama case, it will be found that a majority of the States hold that such bequests are lawful.⁵ Even in Alabama if the bequest had been to a clergyman or a certain person and accompanied by a request to say Masses, the court might have allowed it.⁶

317. *Name, Bequest, Corporation.*—A mistake in a name does not render a bequest or a gift void if the person intended can be identified.⁷ Also, a devise may be made to a corporation not yet organized and when it is organized the gift or devise will vest. During the interim, it will remain in abeyance.⁸

318. *Clergyman, Undue Influence.*—A clergyman who is a grantee in a deed from a parishioner, although deriving no benefit therefrom, has the burden of showing good faith in the transaction as the law presumes that he is guilty of undue influence. This presumption is further strengthened by proof of the enfeebled condition of the

⁴*Festorazzi v. St. Joseph's*, 104 Ala., 327; 18 So., 394; 25 L. R. A., 360; *Ex parte Schuler*, 134 Mass., 436; *Seiber's Appeal*, 9 At., Pa., 863; *Holland v. Alcock*, 108 N. Y., 312; 16 N. E., 305.

⁵*Festorazzi v. St. Joseph's*, 104 Ala., 327; 18 So., 394; 25 L. R. A., 360.

⁶*McHugh v. McCole*, 97 Wis., 166; 72 N. W., 352.

⁷*Wilson v. Perry*, 29 W. Va., 169; 1 S. E., 302.

⁸*Jones v. Habersham*, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

grantor by age and illness and his susceptibility to influence. Where the property conveyed in trust for the parish was greatly in excess of its needs, the deed was set aside.⁹

319. *Contest, Secession.*—In case of a devise to a church which is claimed by two societies, it is the duty of the court to decide in favor of those who adhere to the ecclesiastical government of the church which was in operation at the time the trust was declared.¹⁰ However, to maintain such action it must be brought by the proper parties.¹¹

320. *Bequests, Membership.*—Bequests left to individuals on condition that they shall remain members of a certain church, can be obtained only by complying with such condition.¹²

321. *Conditions, Religious Tenets.*—In order to determine the conditions of a trust the religious tenets of the donor may be shown to aid in construction of ambiguous provisions.¹³

322. *Name, Uncertainty.*—A bequest to Georgetown University, in the District of Columbia, which was incorporated under the

⁹Good v. Zook, 116 Ia., 582; 88 N. W., 376.

¹⁰Trustees v. Sturgeon, 9 Pa. St., 321.

¹¹Scott v. Curle, 9 B. Mon., 17; Ante, 278, 290.

¹²In re Paulson's will, 127 Wis., 612; 107 N. W., 484.

¹³Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

[323] *Bequests, Devises, and Gifts*

name of "The President and Directors of Georgetown College," is not void for uncertainty, as the only institution of learning in the District of Columbia is Georgetown College.¹⁴

323. *Future Uses, Uncertainty.*—A devise to a foundling or eleemosynary institution, whenever the Christians should create one which the trustees approved, is valid.¹⁵ And a devise to the "First Christian church erected or to be erected in the village of Telfairville, in Burke county, or to such persons as may become trustees of the same," is good as a charitable bequest.¹⁶ A bequest to a priest to hold in trust and pay over to the Sisters for the Poor, is valid.¹⁷ A bequest for the care of a tombstone is valid in some States and not in others without a statutory provision.¹⁸ A bequest to the bishop "to be by him used for Roman Catholic charitable institutions in his diocese," sufficiently describes the beneficiaries and is good.¹⁹ Also, a bequest to Bishop England "in trust for the Ladies of the Ursuline Order residing in Charleston in the State of South Carolina," was held for "The Ladies of the Ursu-

¹⁴62 Cen. L. J., 167.

¹⁵Ould v. Washington, 95 U. S., 303; 24 L. Ed., 450.

¹⁶Jones v. Habersham, 107 U. S., 174; 27 L. Ed., 401.

¹⁷Darcy v. Kelley, 153 Mass., 433; 26 N. E., 1110.

¹⁸Bronson v. Strouse, 57 Conn., 147; 17 At., 699.

¹⁹Tichenor v. Brewer's, 98 Ky., 349; 33 S. W., 86.

line Community of the city of Charleston.”²⁰ A bequest for Masses “to a Roman Catholic priest that shall succeed me in this place,” was held void for uncertainty.²¹ A bequest in trust to a bishop by name to sell and give the proceeds to a society named, is not a devise to the society, but to the bishop in trust.²²

324. *Education, Priesthood.*—A devise or bequest to a clergyman of property to be used for the education of poor Catholic boys for the priesthood, was sustained in court as sufficiently definite for performance.²³

325. *Charitable Trust, Cy-Pres.*—Equity will not allow a charitable trust to fail for want of a trustee, but will appoint one.²⁴ The doctrine of *cy-pres* as applied to charitable gifts and trusts, is not in force in Alabama, Connecticut, Delaware, Indiana, Maryland, Iowa, New York, North Carolina, nor Wisconsin; but seems to prevail in California, Illinois, Massachusetts, Missouri, Pennsylvania, and Rhode Island.

326. *Error, Ambiguity.*—Great latitude is allowed in charitable bequests, devises, and gifts, in proving *aliunde* the beneficiary

²⁰Banker v. Phelan, 4 Barb., 80.

²¹Bowers v. Fromm, Add., Pa., 362.

²²Germania v. Baltes, 113 Ill., 29.

²³McDonald v. Shaw, 98 S. W., 952.

²⁴Beaty v. Kurtz, 27 U. S., 566; 7 L. Ed., 521.

[327–328 *Bequests, Devises, and Gifts*

intended where there is error in the name or a latent ambiguity.²⁵ The religion of the testator will be considered in proving intention.

327. *Dissolution, Resulting Trust.*—On dissolution of a religious society, the money collected or derived from the sale of property goes back as a resulting trust to the contributors.²⁶

328. *Charity, Institutions.*—To determine what is a charitable trust, devise, or gift, it is necessary to particularly bear in mind the most comprehensive definition of charity. Legacies for schools, churches, libraries, cemeteries, the poor, hospitals, and numerous other eleemosynary institutions, have been sustained under charitable bequests when they otherwise would have failed.²⁷

²⁵Heiss v. Murphy, 40 Wis., 276; Fadness v. Braunburg, 73 Wis., 257; 41 N. W., 84.

²⁶Coe v. Washington, 149 Mass., 543; 21 N. E., 966.

²⁷Clark v. Brown, 108 S. W., 421, Tex.

CHAPTER XXIV

TAXATION

329. *Purposes, Exempt.*—Only church property that is actually used for church or charitable purposes, is exempt from taxation. Property held for its increase or profit is not exempt.¹ Land bought for a church on which no work on the church is yet begun, is not exempt from taxation.²

330. *Lot Isolated, Not Exempt.*—A lot isolated from the other property of the church of a congregation, is not exempt because the congregation intends to build a church thereon in the future, and actually did build a church thereon two years later.³

331. *Bishop's Residence, Hospital.*—Real property the title to which is in the archbishop in fee in accordance with the discipline of the Catholic Church, is not owned by a religious association so as to exempt it from taxation. The records do not show a trust for the diocese nor any other beneficiary. A court will not take

¹Parker v. Quinn, 23 Utah, 332; 64 Pac., 961.

²All Saints v. Brookline, 59 N. E., 1003, Mass.

³Green v. Outagamie, 76 Wis., 587; 45 N. W., 536.

judicial notice of the laws of the Catholic Church.⁴ But property used as a hospital to care for the sick and wounded of all races and religions indiscriminately, with or without pay according to the ability of the patient, is a benevolent institution engaged in a work of charity, and comes under the law of tax exemption.⁵

332. *Parsonage, Rented.*—A parsonage owned by a congregation and used only as a residence for the clergyman is not exempt because of some part of it being also used for alleged religious services, to-wit: morning prayers of the children before school, a sewing society, and a meeting place for Sunday-school teachers.⁶ However, a house and lot rented and kept by the minister was exempt from taxation.⁷

333. *Masonic Order, Charity, Elks.*—A charity which is confined exclusively to the members of the Masonic Order and their families or to the widows and children of deceased members or those who are directly or indirectly connected with the society, is not purely a public charity within the provisions of the constitution relating to the

⁴Katzer v. City, 104 Wis., 16; 80 N. W., 41.

⁵St. Joseph Hospital v. Ashland, 96 Wis., 636; 72 N. W., 43.

⁶Ramsey v. Church, 45 Minn., 229; 47 N. W., 783.

⁷Gray v. Lafayette, 65 Wis., 567; 27 N. W., 311.

Appropriations, Contracts 334-335]

exemption of institutions of purely public charity from taxation.⁸ And property held by the Elks for entertainment and to promote social intercourse was held not exempt.⁹

334. *Supporting Church, Mississippi.*—In the early ages of the States several of them had laws for taxing all the property in parishes laid out by the State for the support of Protestant churches. Gradually these laws were eliminated and at the present time there is probably no State excepting Mississippi that uses money for the support of a church. Maine changed her laws in 1821, and other States followed from time to time.¹⁰ While those taxes were collected, no land within the parish was exempt in some States and in others the property of a non-resident was exempt.¹¹ In New Hampshire and Pennsylvania, a person could not be compelled to pay the taxes to a denomination of which he was not a member.¹²

335. *Appropriations, Contracts, Rent.*—Under the constitution of the United States,

⁸Newport v. Masonic, 108 Ky., 333; 56 S. W., 405; 49 L. R. A., 252.

⁹Trustees v. City, 122 Wis., 452; 100 N. W., 837.

¹⁰Dahl v. Kimball, 6 Me., 171.

¹¹Turner v. Inhabitants, 16 Mass., 208; Goodell Mfg. Co. v. Trask, 28 Mass., 514.

¹²Muzzy v. Wilkins, Smith, 1; Ebau v. Hendell, 5 Watts, 43; 30 Am. Dec., 291.

Congress can not make appropriations nor give aid to any denomination. Also, similar provisions are in many of the constitutions of the States. However, many cases arise out of contracts, which border upon these various rules, and in some States the constitutional provision of the State is such that the State Legislature may legislate concerning religions and give certain aid and support thereto. Paying rent to a congregation for a school-room is not an appropriation or aid to a church contrary to the constitution.¹³

¹³Miller v. Board, 19 Ill. App., 48; Municipality of Ponce v. R. C. A. Ch., 28 Sup. Ct. R., 737; Reuben Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Repr., 690; Dorner v. Dist., 118 N. W., 353.

CHAPTER XXV

ELEEMOSYNARY INSTITUTIONS

336. *Poor, Institutions, Negligence.*—As hospitals, homes for the poor, and other eleemosynary institutions are supported by money given to charity, it would be a diversion of the trust funds if such institutions could be compelled to pay damages for negligence causing personal injury or death. The general rule is that the person causing the injury may be liable, but not the institution.¹ However, a charitable institution has been held liable for negligence of its manager to notify a nurse of the contagious nature of a case assigned to her.²

337. *Surgeon, Gratuitous Services.*—A charitable medical institution is not liable for the negligence of its surgeon in operating upon a patient gratuitously where such institution exercises due care in employing a surgeon deemed competent. The fact that besides such gratuitous services, medicine is taught therein for tuition fees and patients who are able to pay are charged a small fee

¹53 Cen. L. J., 224.

²Hewitt v. Woman's, 73 N. H., 556; 64 At., 190.

[338-340 *Eleemosynary Institutions*

for room, board, nursing, etc., but no fee from the patient to the doctor, does not change it from a charitable institution.³ However, a hospital that is an adjunct to a medical school is liable.⁴

338. *Charitable Institution.*—An institution that limits its benefactions to the members of a particular denomination is, in the absence of a statute to the contrary, a charitable institution.⁵ This rule has exceptions.⁶

339. *Charter, Real Estate.*—The trustees of a religious, literary, or other benevolent society, can not, irrespective of the powers granted by its charter, purchase and hold real estate under trusts of their own creation which will protect their property from creditors.⁷

340. *Mortmain, Title, Trust.*—The statute of mortmain was never in force in Pennsylvania, so a religious corporation can hold the legal title to land in trust for the heir-at-law of a testator who has devised it to the corporation in trust for uses that

³Collins v. New York, 69 N. Y. Supp., 106.

⁴Louisville v. Hammock, 106 S. W., Ky., 219; 14 L. R. A., N. S., 784.

⁵Indianapolis v. Grant, 25 Ind., 518.

⁶Newport v. Masonic, 108 Ky., 333; 56 S. W., 405; 49 L. R. A., 252.

⁷McGee v. German, 13 N. J. Eq., 77.

were void under the English law.⁸ The only States that have statutes of mortmain are Mississippi and North Carolina. Yet in those States the statutes are somewhat different from the law of England.

341. *Public Institutions, Support.*—Benevolent and charitable institutions under a church are not public institutions, and moneys can not be appropriated for their support.⁹

342. *Nuns, Vows, Property.*—When joining a society of nuns, one of the vows taken was that all property should be held in common and whatever property was received after taking the vows should belong to the society. A person who left the order was not concluded from making claim for her property.¹⁰

⁸Miller v. Lerch, Wall. Jr., Pa., 210.

⁹St. Mary's Industrial School for Boys v. Brown, 45 Md., 310.

¹⁰White v. Price, 108 N. Y., 661; 15 N. E., 427.

CHAPTER XXVI

SCHOOLS

343. *Parent, Education, State, Parochial Schools.*—The right of the parent to use judgment as to the proper necessities of his child, including board, lodging, and education, is generally conceded. However, there must be no abuse of these parental rights, as the child also has rights that even a parent can not infringe. Therefore, the State may require a reasonable opportunity for the education of every child; and if the parent can not give it on account of his poverty, it is in the power of the State to take his child in charge and furnish him an education. The right of the State to make laws requiring a parent to send his child to school between certain ages, as from four to twenty-one years, is well settled. The question of the parent's being obliged to send his child to the public schools or being forbidden to send his child to a private or parochial school, is not settled in some States; but it is being settled in favor of the parent. The Kentucky constitution contains this provision: “. . . nor shall any man be compelled to

Orphan Asylums, School Moneys 344]

send his child to any school to which he may be conscientiously opposed.”¹ The right of the State to supervise or inspect private and parochial schools under the police power of the State can not be questioned.²

344. *Orphan Asylums, School Moneys.*—In 1850 the New York Legislature enacted a law as follows: “The schools of the several incorporated orphan asylums within the State other than those in the city of New York, shall participate in the distribution of the school moneys in the same manner and to the same extent in proportion to the number of children educated therein, as the common schools in their respective cities and districts.” The court ruled that moneys devoted by the constitution to the State for the support of common schools could not be distributed under the act, for the reason that such asylums are not public schools; but moneys from other sources might be paid for the education of such orphan children in proportion to their number to those educated in the common schools of their respective cities and districts.³ The schools kept by the Roman Catholic Orphan Asylum

¹Sec. 5, Ky. Constitution; Contra: N. H. Constitution, art. 6.

²Donahue v. Richards, 38 Me., 376; State v. Baily, 157 Ind., 324; 61 N. E., 730; 54 Cen. L. J., 142.

³St. Patrick's v. Rochester, 34 How. Pr., 227.

Society of the city of Brooklyn, are not common schools within the meaning of the constitution, and a provision of law that such schools should share in the distribution of school moneys raised by the State was void.⁴

345. *Contract, Direct Payment, Lease.*—No school of any denomination or sect is entitled to public moneys for its support, either by contract for the education of students therein or by direct payment from the government.⁵ A school conducted by the Catholic Church in which religious instruction is given to Catholic children is a sectarian institution within the constitutional provision against using public funds for sectarian purposes; but public school money expended for such a school conducted by this school district could not be recovered by suit against the school officers.⁶ Also, a school maintained as a charity under direction of trustees elected by the town where they must be of a certain religion, is not entitled to public moneys.⁷ But the lease of a part of a parochial school building or the basement of a church for public school pur-

⁴People v. Board, 13 Barb., N. Y., 400.

⁵Synod v. State, 2 S. Dak., 366; 50 N. W., 632; 14 L. R. A., 418.

⁶State v. Hallock, 16 Nev., 373; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

⁷Jenkins v. Andover, 103 Mass., 94.

Teacher, Lord's Prayer, Exercise **346**

poses does not violate the law.⁸ In the States of Maine, Iowa, Massachusetts, Illinois, Ohio, Kansas, and Texas, the reading of the King James Bible and the singing of hymns and saying prayers have been held not sectarian.⁹ But in Wisconsin, the court ruled the other way.¹⁰

346. *Teacher, Lord's Prayer, Exercise.*—"A public school teacher, who, for the purpose of quieting the pupils and preparing them for their regular studies, repeats the Lord's Prayer and the Twenty-second Psalm as a morning exercise, without comment or remark, in which none of the pupils are required to participate, is not conducting a form of religious worship or giving sectarian or religious instruction."¹¹ Substantially the same rule applies in Pennsylvania.¹² However, similar religious exercises conducted by Catholic teachers have

⁸Millard v. Board, 121 Ill., 297; 10 N. E., 669; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., Wis., 353.

⁹Church v. Bullock, 100 S. W., Tex., 1025; Donahue v. Richards, 38 Me., 379; 56 C. L. J., 81.

¹⁰State v. Board, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 7 L. R. A., 330; 53 Am. R., 282; 14 L. R. A., 419; Dorner v. School Dist., 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908).

¹¹Billard v. Board, 69 Kan., 53; 76 Pac., 422; 66 L. R. A., 166.

¹²Stevenson v. Hanyon, 7 Pa. Co. Ct., 585; State v. Board, 76 Wis., 177; 44 N. W., 967; 7 L. R. A., 330; State v. Scheve, 65 Neb., 853; 91 N. W., 846; 59 L. R. A., 927.

generally been held sectarian and not permissible in public schools.¹³

347. *Ohio, Directors, Bible.*—The constitution of the State of Ohio does not enjoin nor require religious instruction or the reading of religious books in the public schools. The board of directors of a district has charge of the instruction and books to be used therein, and their official discretion will not be interfered with. Therefore, they were authorized to have the Bible read at the opening of the school.¹⁴

348. *Public School, Bible, Prayer.*—The committee having control of a public school may make a rule requiring the school to be opened by reading from the Bible and prayer every morning, and that each child shall bow the head during such prayers; that any scholar shall be excused from bowing the head whose parents request it; and when any scholar refuses to obey such rule and his parents refuse to request that he shall be excused, the committee may exclude such scholar from the school.¹⁵

¹³*Dorner v. School District*, 118 N. W., Wis., 353 (Nov. 27, 1908); *County v. Industrial School*, 125 Ill., 540; 18 N. E., 183; 1 L. R. A., 437; 8 Am. St. Rep., 386; *O'Connor v. Hendrick*, 184 N. Y., 421; 77 N. E., 612.

¹⁴*Board v. Minor*, 23 Ohio, 250; *Campanas v. Calderhead*, 17 Mont., 548; 44 Pac., 83; 36 L. R. A., 277.

¹⁵*Spiller v. Woburn*, 12 Allen, Mass., 127.

Schoolhouse for Sunday-School 349-351]

349. *Text-Books, State.*—The State has the power to grant authority to the State Board of Education to select and prescribe text-books to be used in the public schools of the State.¹⁶

350. *Bible, Conscience, Constitution.*—The parent of a child expelled from the public school can not maintain an action against the school committee by whose orders it was done. In the same case it was held that a rule requiring every scholar to read a particular version of the Bible, though it may be against the conscience of some to do so, does not violate the letter or spirit of the constitution.¹⁷

351. *Schoolhouse, Sunday-School Purposes.*—The inhabitants of a school district have no right to use the schoolhouse for religious meeting on Sunday against the objection of any taxpayer in the district, notwithstanding that the officers of the district granted such right. A taxpayer may obtain an injunction against such use, although the injury to him be very slight, as he has no other remedy.¹⁸ A district school board can not authorize the use of the schoolhouse for any other than school purposes.¹⁹

¹⁶School Commissioners v. State Board, 26 Md., 505.

¹⁷Donahue v. Richards, 38 Me., 379; 56 Cen. L. J., 81.

¹⁸Scofield v. State, 27 Conn., 499.

¹⁹School v. Arnold, 21 Wis., 657.

352. *Child, Immoral Character.*—The school committee in order to maintain purity and discipline, may exclude therefrom a child whom they deem to be of licentious or immoral character, although such character is not manifested in acts of licentiousness or immorality within the school.²⁰

353. *Parents, Studies, Teacher.*—The requirement of a teacher that a scholar in grammar shall write English composition is a reasonable one, and refusal to comply therewith in the absence of a request from his parents that he be excused therefrom, will justify the expulsion of a scholar from school.²¹ But when a parent selects certain studies that the law provides to be taught for his child to study, the teacher has no right to insist that the child shall take some other study and inflict punishment to enforce obedience.²²

354. *Chastisement, Cruel.*—The chastisement of a scholar by the schoolmaster must not be excessive or cruel, but it should be reasonably proportioned to the offense and within the bounds of moderation.²³

²⁰*Sherman v. Charleston*, 8 Cushing, Mass., 160; *State v. Board*, 116 N. W., 232; 67 Cen. L. J., 241.

²¹*Guernsey v. Pitkin*, 32 Vt., 224.

²²*Wood v. Morrow*, 35 Wis., 59.

²³*Anderson v. State*, 3 Head, Tenn., 455.

355. *Schoolmaster, Authority.*—Although a schoolmaster has in general no right to punish a pupil for misconduct after the dismissal of the school for the day and the return of the pupil to his home, yet he may on the pupil's return to school punish him for any misbehavior, though committed out of school, which has a direct and immediate tendency to injure the school and to subvert the master's authority. The fact that the master acted in good faith will not excuse him from damages for the punishment of a scholar where the punishment is clearly excessive and unnecessary. However, where there is a reasonable doubt the master should have the benefit of it.²⁴

356. *Force, Assistance.*—And where a scholar in school hours places himself in the desk of the instructor and refuses to leave it on the request of the master, the master may immediately use such force and call to his assistance such aid from another person as may be necessary to remove the scholar. The same rule would apply to any one who is not a scholar and intrudes upon the school.²⁵

357. *White, Unmarried.*—Before the adoption of the fourteenth amendment it

²⁴Lander v. Seaver, 32 Vt., 114.

²⁵Stevens v. Fassett, 27 Me., 266.

was necessary in most States that in addition to the child being under twenty-one years of age, he must be of white blood and unmarried.²⁶ In Ohio, negroes, Indians, and children of less than half white blood, were not entitled to the benefit of the school fund; and even where this would entirely exclude from school children not sufficient to form a district, still it was held that such children could not attend the white school.²⁷

358. *Facilities, the Constitution.*—So long as abundant facilities are given for the education of all the children of a district, it is not a violation of the constitution of the United States to keep negro and white people separated. The same rule applies to courts.²⁸

359. *Residents, Public Schools.*—Children in a German Protestant orphan asylum are not “children, wards, or apprentices of actual residents” in the district of the asylum, and therefore are not entitled to enter the public schools of the district.²⁹

²⁶Draper v. Cambridge, 20 Ind., 268.

²⁷Lane v. Baker, 12 Ohio St., 237; State v. City, 19 Ohio, 178; Van Camp v. Board, 9 Ohio St., 406.

²⁸Ex parte Plessy, 45 La. Ann., 80; 11 So., 948; 16 Sup. Ct. R., 1138; 163 U. S., 537; 41 L. Ed., 256; 18 L. R. A., 639.

²⁹State v. School Directors, 10 Ohio St., 448.

360. *Board, Majority.*—Two of the three members of a school board have no authority to act by themselves, and their individual agreement to dismiss a teacher is void. A school board can only act at a duly called meeting of the board, and then the majority vote duly taken decides.³⁰

³⁰*Jackson v. Hampden*, 16 Me., 184.

CHAPTER XXVII

PARENT AND CHILD

361. *Custody, Maternal Relatives, Father.*

—A parent is entitled to the care and custody of his child if he is competent to transact his own business and not otherwise unsuitable. And the mere fact that the maternal relatives who have had the care of the child from its birth have become attached to it and desire to continue to care for it and are able to secure it better advantages than its parent, does not render the parent unsuitable to have its care and custody within the meaning of the statute. Also, the want of a sympathetic nature or cold reserve in a parent or the fact that he is away on business a great deal of the time, is not sufficient to render him unsuitable. But the right of the father may be lost or forfeited by his ill-conduct, gross ill-treatment, cruelty, or abandonment, or when his conduct and life are such as are injurious to the morals and interest of his child. When the father dies or forfeits his right for reasons already given, the mother, if alive, succeeds to all those rights, subject, how-

ever, to the same conditions as the father. And in the case of a child of tender years, the good of the child has to be regarded as the predominant consideration.¹

362. *Mother, Illegitimate, Father.*—The mother has a right to the care and custody of her illegitimate child to the same extent that a parent has to his legitimate child.² The putative father on the mother's death succeeds to the mother's rights as against the maternal relatives and may secure the custody of the child by *habeas corpus*. This rule is different from the one that prevailed in the Roman law.³ However, when the father has given bond for the care, support, and education of an illegitimate child, his right to the custody of the child may be superior.⁴

363. *Legitimized.*—And when under a statute a child is legitimized by acknowledgment or subsequent marriage, the father has the better right to its custody.⁵ Usually there are many provisions in the statutes of the various States which substantially pro-

¹Markwell v. Pereles, 95 Wis., 406 and 424; 69 N. W., 798 and 984.

²Perry v. State, 113 Ga., 936; 39 S. E., 315.

³Aycock v. Harrington, 84 Miss., 204; 36 So., 245; 65 L. R. A., 689.

⁴Wright v. Bennett, 7 Ill., 587.

⁵Graham v. Bennett, 2 Cal., 503.

vide for the rights, relative and otherwise, of the parents and child in such cases.

364. *Punishment, Instrument, Murder.*—A parent or a person *in foro domestico* or *in loco parentis* may give reasonable corrective punishment with a fit instrument to a child. But if a parent or master whips a child so that it dies, he is guilty of manslaughter. And if he uses lethal instruments of punishment, he is guilty of murder.⁶ Where a mother in anger threw a poker at one child and hit and killed another child, she was guilty of manslaughter.⁷ The punishment always becomes unlawful when it is excessive, and drunkenness is no excuse.⁸

365. *Guardian, Religion, Courts.*—In England where a child was taken from the testamentary guardian, who after the death of the testator changed her religion from a Protestant to a Catholic, it was held thereby to be incompetent to continue as guardian.⁹ And in New York it was held that where the father and mother were Catholics, the guardian must endeavor to bring the children up in that faith, as a guardian will not be permitted to proselyte wards.¹⁰

⁶State v. Harris, 63 N. C., 1.

⁷Rex. v. Canon, 7 Car. and P., 438.

⁸Rex. v. Griffen, 6 Cox. C. C., 402.

⁹F. v. F., 1 Ch. (1902), 688.

¹⁰In re Jacques, 82 N. Y. Sup., 986.

Adoption, Rights, Duties 366-367]

But where a father who was a Catholic allowed his child to be brought up by a maternal aunt who was a Protestant, until the child was fourteen years of age, the father was not then entitled to the child's custody for the purpose of having it instructed in his own faith.¹¹ Courts will not interfere with the religion of a child, but will allow it to be brought up in the religion of its parents; however, the best interests of the child will be considered by the court without conceding everything else to its religion.¹²

366. *Convent, Consent.*—A daughter under age who entered a convent to become a nun without the consent of her mother, may, on a writ of *habeas corpus* on the petition of her mother, be required to leave the convent and return to her home.¹³

367. *Adoption, Rights, Duties.*—Persons of suitable age and circumstances to enter the marital relations, may adopt a child. When a married couple do not unite in adopting a child, the consent of the non-adopting spouse must be obtained. Also, if the child's parents are living, their consent is necessary unless they have lost their paternal rights by abandonment or divorce.

¹¹In re Marshall, 33 N. Y. S., 104.

¹²Kennedy v. Borah, 226 Ill., 243; 80 N. E., 767.

¹³Prieto v. Alphonso, 52 La. Ann., 631; 27 So., 153.

The decree of adoption may be set aside for good cause. The adopted parent has all the rights over and duties toward the person of the adopted child that a natural parent has, including necessities and religious training. Usually the child inherits from the adopted parents, but the adopted parents do not inherit from the child. The statutes on adoption are not the same in the several States, but they cover the subject and must be strictly followed.¹⁴

368. *Infancy, Manumission, Marriage.*—At common law a person is an infant until he is twenty-one years of age. Statutes have modified that rule so that girls in some States, and both girls and boys in others, may contract marriage at an earlier age without the parental consent. Generally, an infant can not contract marriage without the consent of the living parent or guardian unless the child has been manumitted. Where the boy was under the age of consent, but he falsely told the priest that he was of full age, his father had the marriage annulled.¹⁵

¹⁴Clarkson v. Hatton, 143 Mo., 47; 44 S. W., 761; 65 Am. St. R., 635; Matter of Johnson, 98 Cal., 531; 33 Pac., 260; 21 L. R. A., 380; Schlitz v. Roenitz, 86 Wis., 31; 56 N. W., 194; 39 Am. St. R., 873; 21 L. R. A., 482; Markwell v. Pereles, 95 Wis., 406; 69 N. W., 798; 67 Cen. L. J., 197.

¹⁵Elliott v. Elliott, 77 Wis., 634; 46 N. W., 806; 57 L. R. A., 155; 10 L. R. A., 568.

CHAPTER XXVIII

HUSBAND AND WIFE

369. *Custody, Father.*—A husband is entitled to the custody of his wife against her father, and where a son-in-law killed his father-in-law in resisting the latter from taking his daughter out of his (the son-in-law's) house, the court held that it could not be more than manslaughter; and if it were necessary to kill to protect and maintain his wife, the defendant was not guilty.¹ But for good cause and without malice a parent may advise his child to leave spouse.²

370. *Corrective Authority, Services, Domicile.*—In America a husband gains no right to corrective authority over his wife. He can neither whip her nor use abusive language to her. The same rule applies to the wife, as they stand equal before the law.³ However, a husband is entitled to all the services of his wife and a promise to pay her extra for housework can not be en-

¹Cole v. State, 75 S. W., 527; 45 Tex.; Cr. App., 225; 57 Cen. L. J., 341.

²Mutter v. Senibbs, 79 N. E., 762, Mass.

³Commonwealth v. McAfee, 108 Mass., 458.

forced.⁴ Also, the husband has the right to determine their place of domicile, and if the wife unreasonably refuses to accompany her husband, it is desertion, for which he may obtain a divorce.⁵

⁴Tuttle v. Sutts, 96 Pac., 260.

⁵Gleason v. Gleason, 4 Wis., 64; 14 Cyc., 846.

CHAPTER XXIX

INDIANS

371. *Indians, Citizens, Wards.*—There are a great number of statutory provisions concerning Indians, both in the United States statutes and in the statutes of the several States, most of which are not of great importance at the present time, as the Indians are confined to a few States. When they become citizens of the State in which they reside, their status is the same as other citizens; but so long as they remain in their tribal relations they are taken care of as wards of the Union.

372. *Schools, Cemeteries, Churches.*—In Oklahoma there are schools provided for them. When a tribe cedes 160 acres to the United States, it will give it a school for ten years, and as much longer as it deems necessary. Also, the Indians may have their own cemeteries, schools, and churches, where the Indians belong to the tribes, and they are allowed lands therefor.¹ In other States, under the general law, the money of Indian

¹32 St. At. L., 636 and 645.

minors may be held in the treasury by the Secretary of the Interior and paid to parents and guardians in such sums and at such times as the Secretary in his discretion may determine.² There is no doubt that out of those moneys, parents might pay for their children at private schools.³

373. *Inspectors, Duties.*—Under the United States laws, inspectors are appointed to visit Indian agencies and investigate all matters concerning them and to examine all contracts and accounts with the Indians and make report thereon to the Secretary of the Interior. The contracts for support of religion, schools, and charitable institutions, come under their duties.⁴

374. *President, Trades.*—The President may cause Indians to be instructed in trades and agriculture and have them taught the elementary branches.⁵

375. *Commissioner, School, Rations, Bible, Sectarian.*—Another officer of great importance is the Commissioner of Indian Affairs, who has most to do with the education and schools of the Indians.⁶ He may require parents and guardians to send chil-

²Chap. 1402, U. S. Laws of 1904.

³Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Rep., 690 (1908).

⁴Sec. 2045, U. S. Statutes.

⁵Secs. 2071 and 2072, U. S. Statutes, and Chap. 188, Laws of 1895.

⁶26 St. At. L., 1014.

dren to school and withhold rations from them for failure so to do. Also, there is a fund under the control of the United States as trustee, with which he may make contracts for the education of Indian children at private schools.⁷ However, the jurisdiction of the commissioner over Indian children does not extend to those off the reservation.⁸ Among other provisions of the United States statutes is the following: "The Christian Bible may be taught in the native language of the Indians if in the judgment of the persons in charge of the school it may be deemed conducive to the moral welfare and instruction of the pupils in such schools."⁹ The Bible continues its position among the Indians, but appropriations for the Church are cut off by the following provision: "It is hereby declared to be the settled policy of the government to hereafter make no appropriations whatever for education in any sectarian school."¹⁰

⁷Quick-Bear v. Leupp, 28 Sup. Ct. Repr., 690; 27 St. L., 628 and 635.

⁸In re Lehah-puc-ka-chee, 98 Fed., 429.

⁹Chap. 503, Laws of 1888.

¹⁰Chap. 3, Laws of 1897.

CHAPTER XXX

JUVENILE COURTS

376. *Reformatories, Object, Liberty.*—During the past few years juvenile courts have been created for the purpose of committing children to reformatories. The proceedings are not criminal actions, but of an equitable nature.¹ However, as the object is to deprive the child of its liberty, the statute must be strictly construed and followed.² An infant can not waive a right.³ If a child has been wrongfully committed or is wrongfully detained, the proper remedy for his discharge is a writ of *habeas corpus*.⁴

¹61 Cen. L. J., 101, 289; 62 Cen. L. J., 215, 219.

²McCann v. County, 6 Mont., 297.

³Hubbard v. Railway, 104 Wis., 160; 80 N. W., 454.

⁴Hochheimer on Custody of Infants, sec. 54; People v. Turner, 55 Ill., 280; People v. Park, 41 N. Y., 21, 33.

CHAPTER XXXI

LIBEL AND SLANDER

377. *Confidential, Tribunal, Malice.*—

The rule is that all confidential statements made to an officer or a tribunal of the church concerning a member in the course of church discipline and for the good of the church, if not made with malice, are privileged, and no action for libel or slander can be maintained therefor.¹

378. *Member, Officer, Councils.*—But slanderous or libelous statements made concerning a person not a member of the church or made concerning a member of the church to another member who is not either an officer or in the councils of the church, are actionable and the person making or publishing such statements is liable for damages. Also, a person who repeats a libel or slander may be liable as though he were the originator.²

¹Kleizer v. Symes, 40 Ind., 562; Etchison v. Pergeson, 88 Ga., 620; 15 S. E., 680; Lucas v. Case, 72 (9 Bush) Ky., 297; York v. Pease, 68 Mass., 288; Piper v. Woolman, 43 Neb., 280; 61 N. W., 588; O'Donahue v. McGovern, 23 Wendell, N. Y., 26; Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292.

²Combes v. Rose, 8 Blackf., 155; Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292; Etchison v. Pergeson, 88 Ga., 620; 15 S. E., 680.

379. *Official Communication, Privileged.*
—An official communication between authorities of the church or an authority and a member of the church concerning a church matter or church members and not made in malice, is privileged.³

380. *Priest, Pastoral Duties.*—Where a priest published from the altar that “Peter Servatius is excommunicated, because he laid hands on the priest to put him out of the church, and he has no more benefit of the prayers of the church. I will not pray for him, and consider him a lost sheep and withdraw all my pastoral blessings from him. If he die, the burial rights of the church will be denied him,” such remarks were held defamatory, unless they were spoken in the proper discharge of the priest’s clerical and pastoral duties and without malice; and the case should have been submitted on the evidence to a jury.⁴

381. *Church Record, Excommunication.*
—An entry of a church record that “A report raised and circulated by A. B. against Brother C., stating that he made him pay a note twice, and proved by A. B. as false,”

³Gardener v. Anderson, Fed. Case, 5220; Rector v. Smith, 11 Ia., 302.

⁴See “Excommunication,” ante. Servatius v. Pichel, 34 Wis., 292; 11 L. R. A., 592.

is libelous.⁵ But an entry of excommunication of a member made in the record and shown to other members, is not libelous, the latter being properly a part of the record and the former extraneous.⁶

382. *Will, Libel, Action.*—The will of a priest contained a statement that a relative had received \$300 from him for clothing, maintenance, education, etc., and promised to repay it, but paid no part of it. Then testator bequeathed said \$300 to two legatees to collect for their own use. The relative filed a petition asking the estate of the priest to be held liable for a libel in the sum of \$50,000 and the court held that as the right of action did not accrue until after the death of the testator, there was a right of action against the estate. As the case never got beyond the probate court, its authority is doubtful.⁷

383. *Language, Insane, Good Faith.*—Unless the language is used by the bishop in the line of his duty, a statement that a priest is irresponsible and insane, that he was removed from his position of priest for good reason, and that he has been guilty of ecclesiastical disobedience, is slanderous

⁵Shelton v. Nause, 46 Ky., 128.

⁶Fawcett v. Charles, 13 Wendell, 473.

⁷54 Cen. L. J., 313.

per se. To make a communication between a bishop and priest privileged it must have been spoken in good faith and in belief that the speaking of it came within the discharge of the bishop's duty.⁸

384. *Rector, Bigamy, Tobacco, Liquor.*—In a case where the rector of an Episcopal church called upon a man charged with bigamy and after a private conversation the minister wrote a letter to the district attorney on behalf of the prisoner, it was held not privileged because it was not made in confidence of the relation and was not kept as a secret.⁹ A letter from a church member of one congregation to the elders of another congregation advising them of the unfitness of a clergyman appointed to the latter parish, and stating that he used tobacco and liquor, that he was an untruthful man, and that his family was no credit to the community, was quasi-privileged; and in the absence of proof that the charges were false and malicious was not actionable.¹⁰

385. *Newspapers, Criticisms, Priest.*—A newspaper has a right to publish criticisms of the conduct of a priest in certain services held in his church if no false state-

⁸Hellstern v. Katzer, 103 Wis., 391; 79 N. W., 429.

⁹Hills v. State, 61 Neb., 589; 85 N. W., 836.

¹⁰Konkle v. Haven, 140 Mich., 472; 103 N. W., 850.

Physical Discipline, Imprisonment **386-387]**

ment of facts is given, since such conduct is a proper subject of discussion; and if such article contains a statement that if certain published accounts of the conduct of the priest are true he acted in an improper manner, etc., it is not libelous because such facts are not true, as it is not an affirmation of the truth thereof. Where the alleged libel was published in a foreign language and the correctness of the translation was disputed, it was an error for the judge to instruct the jury that if the translation introduced in evidence was correct, the defendant was liable, since plaintiff's right to recover should not be made to depend on the absolute accuracy of the translation.¹¹

386. *Clergyman, Discipline, Tribunals, Testimony, Argument.*—What a clergyman says in the administration of the discipline of the church or what is said in tribunals to enforce discipline of the church, including testimony and legitimate argument within the scope of the case, if said in good faith and without malice, is not actionable in the civil courts.¹²

387. *Physical Discipline, Imprisonment, Courts.*—A clergyman who claims to have been slandered by a parishioner can not ad-

¹¹Klos v. Zahorik, 113 Ia., 161; 84 N. W., 1046.

¹²Libel and Slander, Townsend, secs. 233, 234; 25 Cyc, 390, 398, 411.

minister physical discipline nor put the offender under restraint without leaving himself liable for damages for assault and battery or false imprisonment. If the clergyman desires to treat the charge as a church matter, he must go into the church tribunal; otherwise, his proper course is to bring an action for slander in the State court.¹³

388. *Sermon, False Statement, Crime.*—A clergyman may, by words used in a sermon, slander a member of his congregation. However, if he makes no false statement and does not falsely or maliciously charge a crime, what he says in the way of discipline is privileged.¹⁴ The meaning of the words "she is a dirty, vile woman," can not be extended by innuendo.¹⁵

389. *Charges, Robbed, Hypocrite.*—Charges that a person has robbed a church or has stolen from a church, are actionable.¹⁶ Also, charging a person with being a hypocrite and using the cloak of religion for unworthy purposes, is slanderous.¹⁷

¹³Grace v. Dempsey, 75 Wis., 313; 43 N. W., 1127; Grace v. McArthur, 76 Wis., 641; 45 N. W., 518.

¹⁴25 Cyc, 390, 398.

¹⁵62 Cen. L. J., 180.

¹⁶Libel and Slander, Townsend, p. 182 (notes).

¹⁷Libel and Slander, Townsend, sec. 177; 25 Cyc, 398; Edwards v. Bell, 8 Moore, 467.

Newspaper, Profane Swearer 390-393]

390. *Investigation, Probable Cause.*—

When a member of a church consents to an investigation on complaint before a person who is not a member, if the complaint was made on probable cause and not under the pretence of exposing the defendant to scorn or obloquy, he could not subsequently bring an action for libel.¹⁸

391. *Sacraments.*—To publish of a person that he has been deprived of the sacraments of the church to which he belongs, is libelous.¹⁹

392. *Obituary, Tolling Bell.*—To falsely and maliciously publish an obituary notice of a person living, is good ground for an action for libel.²⁰ However, a complaint that a church tolled its bell to announce the death of a member, and did report him dead when he was actually living, and that it was all done for the purpose of annoying, harassing, and vexing the person and his family, was held not sufficient to support an action for libel. The latter case is doubtful law.²¹

393. *Newspaper, Profane Swearer.*—A newspaper in a notice of the death of a church member has the right to state that

¹⁸Remington v. Congdon, 2 Pickering, 315; Bradley v. Heath, 12 Pickering, 163.

¹⁹McConckle v. Binns, 5 Binns, Pa., 340.

²⁰MacBride v. Allis, 9 Rich., S. C., 313.

²¹State v. Riggs, 22 Vt., 322.

he was a profane swearer, if such was the case.²²

394. *Business or Property, Special Damages.*—A company incorporated for the purpose of transacting business which would include hospitals, schools, and industrial institutions, may maintain an action for libel the same as an individual for any words affecting its business or property, if special damages are alleged and proved.²³

395. *Justification, Repeating.*—It is no justification that libelous matter had been previously published by a third person, that the name of such person was disclosed at the time of repeating the libel, and that the person who was repeating it believed all the statements in the libel to be true.²⁴

²²*Commonwealth v. Batchelder, Thach., Mass., Cr. Cas., 191.*

²³*Shoe & L. v. Thompson, 18 Abbot's Pr., N. Y., 413.*

²⁴*Sans v. Joerris, 14 Wis., 663.*

CHAPTER XXXII

CRIMES

396. *Sins, Crimes, Discipline.*—Crimes are offenses against the civil law. The fact that the church organization may try and punish a member for sinning, or acquit him, has nothing whatever to do with the administration of the criminal law of the State. Therefore, a member may be arrested and tried for any offense before or after the ecclesiastical tribunal has taken action in the matter. But there are certain crimes of a religious nature of which the civil law assumes jurisdiction and punishes, such as blasphemy,¹ disturbing religious meetings,² etc. Most of those laws are statutory and depend wholly upon the statute of the State where the crime is committed.

397. *Profane Language, Smoking, Disturbance.*—Rude behavior or profane language if audible,³ smoking in the church or during services,⁴ cracking and eating nuts

¹5 Cyc, 715; "Disorderly Conduct," 14 Cyc, 467.

²14 Cyc, 540.

³Williams v. State, 83 Ala., 78; 3 So., 616.

⁴Hull v. State, 120 Ind., 153; 22 N. E., 117.

in church,⁵ and fighting near the church so as to disturb the services, are violations of the law.⁶ A father's taking his child out of the church with violence is a disturbance of the meeting.⁷ The disturbance of any member of the congregation assembled for religious worship is a violation of law.⁸ A sentence of \$100 fine or one year's imprisonment in the penitentiary, is not excessive or cruel or unusual punishment on conviction for disturbing a meeting.⁹

398. *Sunday-School, Church.*—An ordinary Sunday-school where the Bible and religious precepts are taught, is a church within the law.¹⁰

399. *Private School.*—A person may be punished under the statute for wilfully disturbing a private school kept in a district schoolhouse for instruction in the art of writing.¹¹

400. *Disturbing a Religious Meeting.*—Under a statute against disturbing a religious meeting, it has been held that it should

⁵Hunt v. State, 3 Tex., 116.

⁶State v. Kirby, 108 N. C., 772; 12 S. E., 1045.

⁷Commonwealth v. Sigman, 2 Clark, Pa., 36.

⁸State v. Wright, 41 Ark., 410; Tanner v. State, 126 Ga., 77; 54 S. E., 914.

⁹State v. Shepherd, 54 S. C., 178; 32 S. E., 146; 14 Cyc., 467, 540.

¹⁰Martin v. State, 65 Tenn., 234.

¹¹State v. Leighton, 35 Me., 195.

Services, Violation, Time 401-402]

define what disturbance is punishable.¹² Also, mere want of attention or observance of ceremonies, as standing or kneeling at times, is not a violation of the law.¹³ Neither is singing out of time, unless done purposely,¹⁴ nor performing a proper duty, such as objecting to a silenced clergyman's conducting the services.¹⁵

401. *Common Law, Offense, Statutory Law.*—If there is no statutory provision, in those States where the common law prevailed before the admission of the State to the Union the offense is punishable under the common law.¹⁶ And even in States where there is a statutory law on the subject, a person may be convicted at common law.¹⁷

402. *Services, Violation, Time.*—The nature of the services and the discipline of the denomination may determine whether there is a violation of the law. Usually the disturbance may occur at any place the congregation is assembled, and at any time when any part of the congregation is assembled for religious services or business.¹⁸

¹²Marvin v. State, 19 Ind., 181.

¹³Brown v. State, 46 Ala., 175.

¹⁴State v. Turkhaw, 69 N. C., 215.

¹⁵Richardson v. State, 5 Tex. App., 470.

¹⁶U. S. v. Brooks, 4 Cranch, C. C., 427.

¹⁷People v. Crowley, 23 Hun., 412; McLane v. Mallock, 7 Ind., 525.

¹⁸Kinney v. State, 38 Ala., 224; State v. Lusk, 68 Ind., 264; State v. Edwards, 32 Mo., 548; Tanner v. State, 126 Ga., 77; 54 S. E., 914.

403. *Force, Priest, Preserve Order.*—A congregation may use sufficient force to remove a disturber.¹⁹ A Catholic priest who is the conductor of religious services and master of ceremonies within his church has the right to preserve order and to remove by force, if necessary, any person who disturbs his services.²⁰

404. *Interrupt, Liquors, Traffic.*—There are statutes in most of the States making it a penal offense to interrupt or molest any assembly or meeting of the people for religious worship, or to sell intoxicating liquors or other articles of traffic within a certain distance of any camp-meeting or other religious assembly, except at a place of business regularly established prior to such meeting or assembly and not with intent of evading the provisions of the law.²¹

405. *Theory, Blasphemy, Crime.*—On the theory that the United States is a Christian nation, blasphemy is held to be a crime.²² Infidels naturally claim that it interferes with their rights. However, there is no more interference with the private rights of

¹⁹MacLean v. Mallock, 7 Ind., 525.

²⁰Wall v. Lee, 34 N. Y., 141.

²¹Meyer v. Baker, 120 Ill., 567; 12 N. E., 79; Commonwealth v. Bearse, 132 Mass., 542; 42 Am. R., 450; West v. State, 28 Tenn., 66; Cramer v. Marks, 64 Pa. St., 151.

²²5 Cyc, 713; Commonwealth v. Linn, 158 Pa., 22; 27 At., 843; 22 L. R. A., 353.

the infidel than there is with the private right of the Mormon who is forbidden to violate the laws of the country by having a plurality of wives; and it has been held that any words importing imprecation for divine vengeance may constitute profane cursing or blasphemy.²³

406. *Religion, God, Ridicule, Virgin.*— Words vilifying the Christian religion,²⁴ denying God or the final judgment,²⁵ and profane ridicule of the Holy Scriptures or of Christ,²⁶ are usually punishable. Also, the use of vile words applied to the Virgin Mary is blasphemy.²⁷

407. *Profanity, Proof, Excuse.*— The profanity must be in the hearing of some person.²⁸ Every time a person profanely swears by taking the name of God in vain is a separate offense.²⁹ The prisoner's confession is sufficient proof; otherwise the prosecution must show that the offense was committed and some one heard the words.

²³Gaines v. State, 75 Tenn., 410; Holcombe v. Cornish, 8 Conn., 375; Bodenheimer v. State, 60 Ark., 10; 28 S. W., 507.

²⁴State v. Chandler, 2 Har., Del., 553.

²⁵Commonwealth v. Kneeland, 37 Mass. (20 Pick), 206.

²⁶People v. Ruggles, 8 Johnson, 225.

²⁷State v. Chandler, 2 Harr., Del., 553.

²⁸State v. Pepper, 68 N. C., 259.

²⁹Odell v. Garnett, 4 Blackf., Ind., 549.

Drunkenness is no excuse.³⁰ Punishment by fine or imprisonment is not in violation of the constitution of the State or of the United States.³¹

408. *Sunday, Business, Fishing.*—The offenses against the Sunday law are so numerous that it would be almost impossible to review them within the limits of this work. Of course, the carrying on of a man's ordinary business is a violation of the Sabbath laws. But in some States selling cigars,³² a butcher selling meat,³³ and even selling soda water,³⁴ and ice cream,³⁵ as well as fishing, traveling, driving, using a slot machine,³⁶ and almost every other imaginable act excepting going to church, has at some time and in some State been declared a violation of the law, and a penalty imposed therefor.

In California,³⁷ Tennessee,³⁸ and Washington,³⁹ men may be shaved on Sunday. In

³⁰People v. Porter, 2 Park, N. Y. Cr., 14.

³¹State v. Chandler, 2 Harr., Del., 553; Commonwealth v. Kneeland, Thach., Mass. Cr. Cas., 346.

³²Miller v. State, 76 Ind., 310.

³³Petty v. State, 58 Ark., 1; 22 S. W., 654.

³⁴Splane v. Commonwealth, 12 At., Pa., 431.

³⁵Commonwealth v. Keiten, 1 Monag., 368.

³⁶Cain v. Daly, 74 S. C., 480; 55 S. E., 110.

³⁷Ex parte Jentisch, 112 Cal., 468; 44 Pac., 803.

³⁸State v. Lorey, 66 Tenn., 95.

³⁹State v. Krech, 10 Wash., 166; 38 Pac., 1001.

some other States it has been held that running a barber shop on Sunday is a violation of the law.⁴⁰

409. *Charity, Necessity, Benefit, Pleasure.*—However, doing works of charity and works of necessity usually are exempt. What is a work of necessity is a question of law. Charity includes whatever proceeds from the sense of moral duty or a feeling of kindness and humanity, and is intended wholly for the purpose of the relief or comfort of another, and not for one's benefit or pleasure.⁴¹

410. *Contracts, Marriage, Notice.*—The common law made no distinction between Sunday and any other day as to making contracts, but it prohibited holding court. In this country the statutory law invariably prohibits any but works of necessity or charity to be done on Sunday. But marriage settlements,⁴² publication of statutory notices on Sunday,⁴³ and promises to marry, have been held legal.⁴⁴

⁴⁰*People v. Havenor*, 149 N. Y., 195; 43 N. E., 541; 3 L. R. A., 689; *State v. Dolan*, 13 Idaho, 693; 92 Pac., 995; 14 L. R. A., N. S., 1259.

⁴¹*Flag v. Inhabitants*, 58 Mass., 243; *Doyle v. Lynn*, 118 Mass., 195.

⁴²*Hayden v. Mitchell*, 103 Ga., 431; 30 S. E., 287.

⁴³*Roth v. Hacks*, 68 Mo. App., 283.

⁴⁴*Hofer v. Cowan*, 55 Cen. L. J., 290.

411. *Funeral, Physician, Subscriptions.*—To attend a funeral, to employ an undertaker, or a physician, on Sunday, has been tested in the courts, and finally decided to be works of necessity or charity and not a violation of the Sunday law. Also, subscriptions made for church purposes and in works of charity on Sunday have been held legal and binding.⁴⁵

412. *Jews, Seventh-Day Observers.*—In several of the States it has been held that Jews and Seventh-Day observers of the Sabbath must obey the Sunday law.⁴⁶ However, in many States there is a statute expressly exempting people who keep the seventh day of the week; but still they sometimes have a provision, unless “he shall wilfully disturb thereby some other person or some religious assembly on said day.”

413. *Societies, Secular Work.*—Business meetings of benevolent and church societies for benevolent or church work may be held on Sunday. Even the constitution of such societies may be amended on Sunday. However, secular work that does not come strictly

⁴⁵Byrant v. Watson, 127 Ind., 42; 26 N. E., 687; Allen v. Duffy, 43 Mich., 1; 4 N. W., 427; 11 L. R. A., 63; Dale v. Knapp, 98 Pa., 389.

⁴⁶Society v. Commonwealth, 52 Pa., 125; Parker v. State, 84 Tenn., 476.

under the functions of such societies would be unlawful.⁴⁷

414. *Sunday, Begins, Ends.*—Usually people believe they know what the word Sunday means, when it begins, and when it ends. Christianity usually recognizes the time from midnight to midnight as Sunday, and that is the usual time recognized by law.⁴⁸ But the solar day only,⁴⁹ or from midnight to sunset,⁵⁰ give us a variety which may not be complete. Also, we have the further anomaly of a note made at 2 o'clock on Saturday night, being held valid.⁵¹

415. *Religious Liberty, Law.*—The constitutional guarantee of religious liberty is not violated by enforcing the Sunday law.⁵²

416. *Necessaries, Doctor.*—As a parent or husband is obliged to furnish necessities for his children and wife, when medical treatment becomes necessary, he is liable for manslaughter for failure to do his duty, even in case of religious disbelief in the efficacy of medicine. Courts are not inclined to

⁴⁷*McCabe v. Father Matthews*, 24 Hun., 149; *People v. Young*, 67 Barb., 357.

⁴⁸*Philadelphia v. Lehman*, 56 Md., 209; *Kroer v. People*, 78 Ill., 294.

⁴⁹*Fox v. Abel*, 2 Conn., 541.

⁵⁰*Bryant v. Inhabitants*, 39 Me., 193; *Tracy v. Jenks*, 32 Mass., 465.

⁵¹*Carpenter v. Crane*, 1 Root, Conn., 98.

⁵²*Judefinde v. State*, 78 Md., 510; 28 At., 405; 22 L. R. A., 721, note.

make any distinction as to religious belief, and the prevailing rule in this country is that the parent is liable if he negligently allows his child to die when it might have been saved by the services of a doctor.⁵³

417. *Christian Healer, Consent.*—A Christian healer can not be held liable except under a State law. One who consents to treatment has no action for damages unless there is a failure to exercise the care and skill of a Christian Scientist. This rule might not apply to one incompetent to consent to a contract.⁵⁴

418. *Politics.*—A minister who had been expelled by his congregation for voting the Democratic ticket, had some of the members of the church arrested under the election laws for intimidating a voter. The court held that as he “suffered no pecuniary loss, personal injury, or physical restraint,” no crime was committed.⁵⁵

419. *Mail, Obscene Language.*—Under the United States postal laws against sending “obscene, lewd or lascivious” books or papers through the mail, a person can not be convicted without proof that the matter is

⁵³55 Cen. L. J., 44; 56 Cen. L. J., 261; *State v. Chene-worth*, 163 Ind., 94; 71 N. E., 197; 59 Cen. L. J., 202.

⁵⁴*Speed v. Tomlinson*, 73 N. H., 46; 59 At., 376; 68 L. R. A., 432.

⁵⁵*State v. Rodgers*, 128 N. C., 576; 38 S. E., 34.

obscene, lewd, and lascivious, as the word "or" should be construed to mean "and." Also, the court held that a newspaper article on the doctrine of the Immaculate Conception written in coarse and obscene language that offended the religious sentiments of the people, but had no tendency to induce sexual immorality, did not render the newspaper unmailable nor the publisher guilty under the United States statutes. The court says: "Those parts of the article most relied upon to sustain the charge, though ostensibly a discussion of a religious subject, are couched in language not quite suitable for insertion in a judicial opinion, however well adjusted to such applause as might be expected from taste of a certain degree of degradation."⁵⁶

420. *"Fair," Chances, Gambling.* — A church "fair" at which chances are sold, drawings had, or any game of chance permitted, is illegal and may be punished as gambling.⁵⁷

⁵⁶U. S. v. Moore, 104 Fed., 78.

⁵⁷Constant v. Rector, 4 Daly, 1.

CHAPTER XXXIII

CEMETERIES

421. *Statutes, Land.*—There are sufficient statutory provisions on cemeteries to make a large book, and the frequent changes made in such laws render a full statement of the law impossible. The statutes against locating cemeteries near cities, dwellings, etc., should be carefully examined before buying land therefor.¹

422. *United States, Jurisdiction.*—The jurisdiction over the United States cemeteries is in the State where the cemeteries are located unless such jurisdiction has been ceded to the United States.²

423. *Tombstones, Soldiers.*—The United States will erect tombstones at the graves of soldiers who served in the Civil War, in all cemeteries where their graves are unmarked. Wherever the United States has jurisdiction over cemeteries, it has made it a criminal offense punishable by fine or imprisonment to deface a tombstone.³

¹Frederickson v. W. R. Cen. Ass., 133 Wis., 502; 113 N. W., 1023.

²14 Op. Atty-Gen., 27; secs. 4780-4782, U. S. Statutes; 16 Op. Atty-Gen., 13.

³20 St. at L., 281.

424. *Indigent Soldiers, Tombstones.*—

Most of the States have statutes providing for the burial of indigent soldiers and for putting tombstones at their graves. The attention of relatives of deceased soldiers should be called to it.

425. *State Authority.*—The State Legislature has authority to control cemeteries or delegate that authority to some one else, and afterward to transfer it to a different person.⁴

426. *Maryland, Two Acres.*—Although the declaration of rights of the State of Maryland restricted the sale of lands for a cemetery for a church to two acres, the Legislature has power to grant leave to a cemetery association to take title to more land. And where the trustees bought twelve acres of land for a burial ground and a subsequent act of the Legislature authorized the enlargement of the cemetery not to exceed twenty-five acres, the title to the excess of the valid purchase was ratified and the title vested in the trustees.⁵

427. *Consent, Application.*—Where a statute provides that no cemetery shall be laid out without first obtaining the consent of the municipal authorities thereto, a writ-

⁴*Sohier v. Trinity Ch.*, 109 Mass., 1; *City v. Town*, 82 Wis., 374; 52 N. W., 425.

⁵*Trustees v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

ten communication signed by the officers of an incorporated society is sufficient application; and a motion granting consent adopted by the city council is sufficient action on its part to comply with the statute.⁶

428. *Charter, Ground, Members.*—An application for a charter to incorporate a cemetery need not specifically locate the ground.⁷ The charter or the articles of incorporation, or by-laws made under them, generally determines who shall be members of the corporation. And where every owner of a lot signing the constitution and by-laws becomes a member, the trustees can not vote on the unsold lots.⁸

429. *Police Power, Trespass, Burial.*—Under our laws the State, by reason of its police power, has control over the cemeteries within it. However, that power has generally been very favorably exercised. Laws both civil and criminal have been enacted to protect cemeteries from invasion and trespass and to protect tombstones from injury.⁹ When authorized by the Legislature a city may make a by-law prohibiting burial within its limits, notwithstanding that the cemetery

⁶Porch v. St. Bridget's, 81 Wis., 599; 51 N. W., 1007.

⁷In re Highland, 4 Pa. Dist. Rep., 653.

⁸Commonwealth v. Fisher, 7 Phil., 264; Bourland v. Springdale, 158 Ill., 458; 42 N. E., 86.

⁹City v. Watson, 56 N. J. L., 667; 24 L. R. A., 843; 49 Cen. L. J., 307.

has been constantly used for over one hundred years.¹⁰ Also, the city has authority to protect and regulate the use of a cemetery."¹¹

430. Dwelling, Limits.—Most of the States provide that no cemetery shall be laid out within a certain limit of a dwelling. But after the cemetery is established a man can not have it moved when he puts up a dwelling within the limits or where he consented to the cemetery at the time it was established.¹²

431. Well, Pollution.—And where a man had built a dwelling near a cemetery, it was not good ground for him to prevent the enlargement of the cemetery by showing that it might destroy his well. The court questions whether there is any legal ground for complaint for the pollution of subterranean waters when caused by the proper use without negligence of the adjacent premises.¹³ Additional lands may be obtained under the law of eminent domain by condemnation.¹⁴

¹⁰Coates v. City, 7 Cowan, N. Y., 585; Humphrey v. Frost, 109 N. C., 132; 13 S. E., 793; City v. Austin, 87 Tex., 330; 28 S. W., 528; 47 Am. St. R., 114.

¹¹Stockton v. City, 42 N. J. Eq., 531; 9 At., 203; First v. Meyers, 5 Okla., 819; 50 Pac., 70; 38 L. R. A., 329.

¹²Stearns v. Manchester, 63 N. H., 390; Henry v. Trustees, 48 Ohio, 671; 30 N. E., 1122.

¹³Upjohn v. Board, 46 Mich., 542; 9 N. W., 845.

¹⁴Edwards v. Stonington, 20 Conn., 466.

432. *Exempt, Execution, Mortgage.*—The statutes in most of the States exempt the tombstones and lots in a cemetery from sale on execution.¹⁵ Also, a cemetery lot can not be sold under mortgage after bodies have been buried therein, as any one may be arrested for desecration of graves.¹⁶

433. *Public, Regulation.*—The right to bury in a public cemetery is a privilege or license that is subject to municipal regulation, and revocable whenever the public necessity requires it.¹⁷

434. *Nuisance, Public Health, Disease.*—A cemetery is not a nuisance *per se*, but if it is proved that the burial of dead bodies in a certain cemetery does injure the public health and is a fruitful source of transmission of disease, the State may prohibit such burial at certain places within cities or adjacent to dwellings. But unless authorized by the Legislature a council has no right by ordinance to provide that no one shall be buried within half a mile of any habitation or public thoroughfare.¹⁸ And where the

¹⁵Oakland v. People, 93 Tex., 569; 57 S. W., 27; 55 L. R. A., 503.

¹⁶Louisville v. Nevin, 73 Ky., 549; First v. Hazel, 63 Neb., 844; 89 N. W., 378.

¹⁷Page v. Simons, 63 N. H., 17.

¹⁸Wygant v. McLaughlin, 39 Or., 429; 64 Pac., 867; 54 L. R. A., 636; 53 Cen. L. J., 48.

Legislature authorized a city to remove the bodies interred and allow streets through the land, it had authority to do so.¹⁹

435. *Devise, Easement, Rules.*—The general rule of law is that a man can not devise away a cemetery lot in which members of his family are buried. He owns only a license or at the most an easement which is subject to the rules of the cemetery association and the police power of the State. However, there are some exceptions.²⁰

436. *Conditions.*—A condition in a deed that the lot can not be sold, assigned, or transferred without consent of the cemetery corporation, is as good and binding as in any other conveyance of real estate.²¹

437. *Inherits, Right.*—Where a son inherits from his father the right to burial in a cemetery lot, he has the right to remove and inter therein the bodies of his grandmother and sister who had been buried elsewhere.²²

¹⁹*Trustees v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599; *Close v. Glenwood*, 107 U. S., 466; 2 Sup. Ct. R., 267; 27 L. Ed., 408; *Matter of Bd. of Street Opening*, 133 N. Y., 329; 31 N. E., 102; 28 Am. St. R., 640; 16 L. R. A., 180.

²⁰*In re Waldron*, 26 R. I., 84; 58 At., 453; 67 L. R. A., 118; *Wright v. Hollywood*, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94; 52 L. R. A., 621.

²¹*Perkins v. Mass.*, 138 Mass., 361.

²²*Wright v. Hollywood*, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94.

438. *Certificate.*—A certificate was issued for the burial of Dennis Coppers in the following form:

“Office of Calvary Cemetery,
New York, December 1, 1873.

RECEIVED from Mr. Dennis Coppers, seventy-five dollars, being the amount of purchase money of a plot of ground 8 feet by 8 feet, in Calvary Cemetery.

D. BRENNAN,
Superintendent of Calvary Cemetery.

4 Graves, 5, 6, 7, 8, Plot D, Section 7, Range 35.”

439. *Freemason, Title, Right.*—Prior to 1879, the mother, wife, and other relatives of Coppers, who were Roman Catholics, were buried in the lot covered by the deed given in the last paragraph. Coppers, who was a Freemason, died in August, 1879, and his funeral services were held under the auspices of the Masons from an Episcopal church, as directed in his will. The rules and doctrines of the Church forbid the burial in consecrated ground of the body of one who was not a Roman Catholic or who was a member of the Masonic fraternity. The Church authorities refused to allow Coppers to be buried in the cemetery, and application was made by his relatives for a

writ of mandamus to compel his interment therein, they having deposited the necessary money to pay all the expenses. The court held that the certificate delivered to Coppers was not a conveyance nor a grant and did not vest title to the land in him, and that the cemetery could not be compelled to execute and deliver to him an absolute conveyance of the lot. His only right under the certificate was the use of the lot for burial purposes subject to and in conformity with the established rules and by-laws of the corporation in so far as they were not in violation of any law. It is the tacit understanding, when a person applies for a burial lot in a cemetery of the Catholic Church, that he is either a Catholic and as such is eligible to be buried therein, or that he applies in behalf of those who are in communion with the Church.²³

440. *Lots, Fee.*—If the cemetery association sells 400 lots to one man and makes a conveyance in fee thereof, it is bound thereby.²⁴

441. *Deed, Privilege, Heirs and Assigns.*—No formal deed is necessary to confer exclusive right to the use of a cemetery lot for

²³*People v. Trustees*, 21 Hun., 184; *McGuire v. St. Pat. C. C.*, 3 N. Y. Sup., 781; *Baltimore v. Manning*, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

²⁴*Palmer v. Cypress*, 122 N. Y., 429; 25 N. E., 983.

burial purposes.²⁵ And certificates of lots issued by a corporation convey no title to the land, as they are not in the form necessary to constitute a conveyance of land. Their only effect is to grant the privilege of interment so long as the ground continues to be used for the purposes of burial.²⁶ A deed of a cemetery lot "to him, his heirs, and assigns forever," gives only an easement in the freehold, and does not give title to the soil, and is subject to changes made necessary by altered circumstances.²⁷

442. *Access, Purposes.*—Title to a cemetery lot gives the right of access to it for the usual purposes, including putting up monuments.²⁸

443. *Monuments, Inscriptions, Drunkenness, Non-Baptized, Strangers.*—The plaintiff obtained from the defendant a deed, which, among other things, contained the following conditions: "that such lot shall not be transferred without the consent of the trustees; shall be subject to the regulations made, or to be made, in the care and management of such cemetery by the trustees, who shall also have the right to prevent

²⁵Conger v. Weyant, 55 Hun., 605.

²⁶Baltimore v. Manning, 72 Md., 116; 19 At., 599.

²⁷Went v. Methodist, 80 Hun., 266; Adams v. First, 148 Mich., 140; 111 N. W., 757; 11 L. R. A., N. S., 509.

²⁸Lakin v. Ames, 64 Mass., 198.

the erection of offensive and improper monuments or inscriptions thereon, and shall retain the right to enter any lot for the removal of anything objectionable; that no remains shall be deposited therein for hire; and that persons dying in drunkenness, duel, or by self-destruction, non-baptized, non-Catholic, or otherwise opposed to the Catholic Church, shall not be therein interred." The plaintiff had buried his father and one of his children in the lot, and brought his wife's remains there for burial. Upon the arrival of the funeral, two small coffins of strangers, one of which bore the name "John McDonald," which the grave-digger had taken up, were at the side of the grave. There was nothing to show how those bodies came to be buried there. The plaintiff brought suit for damages against the cemetery association. The court held that the cemetery association was liable and that the defense that it was a public charitable organization could not be sustained.²⁹

444. *Use, Forfeited.*—When a deed is made of land for the use of a cemetery only, it will be forfeited by using it for a school.³⁰

445. *By-Laws, Member, Burial.*—Where a by-law of a church association provides

²⁹Donnelly v. Boston, 146 Mass., 163; 15 N. E., 505.

³⁰Rawson v. School, 89 Mass., 299.

that any member who pays one dollar to have his name entered in the record shall be entitled to a burial lot, a member who had paid one dollar to the committee of the church before the adoption of such by-law but had ceased to be a member of the congregation, has no right to a burial lot.³¹

446. *Adverse Possession.*—If the original title to a cemetery is defective, the title may become good by adverse possession.³²

447. *Improvements.*—The owner of a lot, unless some rule of the cemetery association or law of the State is to the contrary, may improve it as he sees fit so long as he does not injure the property rights of another.³³

448. *Trespass, Injunction.*—An action for damages *quara clausum fregit*, can be maintained by a relative against any one who trespasses upon a grave of a person lawfully interred.³⁴ Also, a relative may enjoin by suit in equity, on behalf of himself and others equally interested, interference with graves in his cemetery lot.³⁵

³¹St. Johns v. Haans, 31 Pa. St., 9.

³²Dangerfield v. Williams, 26 App., S. C., 508.

³³Silverwood v. Latrobe, 68 Md., 620; 13 At., 161.

³⁴Bessimer v. Jenkins, 111 Ala., 135; 18 So., 565; 66 Am. St. R., 26.

³⁵Davidson v. Reed, 111 Ill., 167; 53 Am. R., 613; Boyce v. Kalbough, 47 Md., 334.

Two-Family Lot, Control 449-451]

449. Roads, Alleys.—Most of the laws relating to highways apply to cemetery roads and alleys, excepting that when a road or alley in a cemetery is vacated the land reverts to the cemetery instead of becoming parts of the adjoining lots.³⁶ In most of the States a road can not be laid out through or take a part of a cemetery.³⁷ But a public highway may be established through a cemetery by user, the same as over other lands.³⁸

450. Abandoned, Bodies.—When a cemetery has been abandoned, those who have relatives buried there may incorporate it for preservation.³⁹ Also, a corporation may change its cemetery and remove the bodies interred therein.⁴⁰

451. Two-Family Lot, Control.—Where a lot is owned jointly by two families, one burying in the north half and the other in the south half, the family burying in the north half can not prevent the burial of a

³⁶Burke v. Wall, 29 La. Ann., 38; Seymour v. Page, 33 Conn., 61; Perkins v. Mass., 138 Mass., 361.

³⁷Hyde Park v. Oakwoods, 119 Ill., 141; 7 N. E., 627; Matter of Bd. of Street Opening, 133 N. Y., 329; 31 N. E., 102; 28 Am. St. E., 640 L. R. A., 180.

³⁸Eastern v. City of Louisville, 13 Ky. L. Rep., 279; 15 S. W., 1117.

³⁹Burke v. Wall, 29 La. Ann., 38; Appeal of Gumbert, 110 Pa. St., 496; 1 At., 437.

⁴⁰In re Reformed, 7 Howard's Pr., 476; Scoville v. MacMahon, 62 Conn., 378; 26 At., 479.

member of the other family in the south half, if entitled to be buried in that cemetery.⁴¹

452. *Burying Dogs, Removal.*—A person who has a lot in a cemetery has no right to bury any but human bodies therein, and one who has buried a pet dog in her lot may be compelled to remove it.⁴²

453. *Stranger, Protest, Kin.*—One member of a family can not authorize the burial of a stranger in a family lot where his parents are buried and against the protest of any other relative of equal or nearer degree of kin.⁴³ When an owner of a lot has consented to the burial of a body therein, he can not afterward remove the body or deface the tombstone, and to do so would be a criminal offense.⁴⁴ When a lot is sold to one person, the cemetery association has the right to limit interments to members of the family owning the lot. However, where there is nothing concerning it in the laws or rules of the association, it might be different.⁴⁵

454. *Association, Bishop, Stipulation, Certificate, License, Revocable.*—The Germans of Cincinnati formed an association

⁴¹Antrim v. Malsbury, 43 N. J. Eq., 288; 13 At., 180.

⁴²Hertle v. Riddell, Ky., 106 S. W., 282; 15 L. R. A., N. S., 796.

⁴³Lewis v. Walker, 165 Pa. St., 30; 30 At., 500.

⁴⁴State v. Wilson, 94 N. C., 1015.

⁴⁵Farely v. Metairie, 42 La. Ann., 28; 10 So., 386; Commonwealth v. Maria, 2 Weekly Notes Cases, 244.

and purchased ten acres of land for a cemetery "for German immigrants, their families, and relatives, of Cincinnati and its vicinity, who might be members of the Catholic Church and in accordance with the doctrine, discipline, usage, and ceremonies of the same." They incorporated with fifteen trustees to be elected annually. Before he would bless the cemetery, the bishop required and the committee stipulated with him in writing the following: That the rules of the Catholic Church should always be faithfully observed in this chiefly: First, that no one should be buried in the ground who had not been baptized or who died out of communion of the Catholic Church, to which the bishop or in his absence the clergy of the German Catholic Church or churches, should be the judge; second, that no poor person should be denied a place therein because his parents were unwilling to pay; third, that any money accrued from the ground should be expended for pious uses and specifically for the relief of the German Catholic poor; fourth, that the remains of persons interred in Catharine Street burial-ground might be removed to the new ground." The bishop subsequently closed the cemetery as a place for burial of Catholics because the congregation had violated

the stipulation: "First, by admitting those to burial who died out of the communion of the Catholic Church; second, by refusing to poor persons the right of burial; third, by expending the funds of the association in other than pious uses and relief of the poor." The court held that the corporation had authority to determine that the cemetery should continue to be used as such, but the conditions might be enforced by any one interested.⁴⁶ Also the question was brought before the court in a case where a man had fallen away from the Church, and the court held that the certificate was a mere license giving no property rights, and revocable; and that the question as to whether the party to be buried therein was in communion with the Church, was one over which the Church itself had exclusive jurisdiction.⁴⁷

455. *Rules, Diocese.*—One who buys the privilege of burying his dead in a cemetery acquires no general right of property, but only a right to use the grounds as a place of interment, and the rules governing a cemetery in force at the time the privilege is acquired measure the extent of the use. Where a rule of the church having charge of the cemetery forbids the burial of non-

⁴⁶Hullman v. Honcomp, 5 Ohio St., 237.

⁴⁷MacGuire v. St. Patrick's, 54 Hun., 207.

Catholics therein, the bishop of the diocese and the local priest, who according to the usage of the church were vested with control, had authority and power to restrain a holder of a lot from interring the body of his son who was not in communion with the church at the time of his death, and who committed suicide.⁴⁸

456. *Negroes, Indians.*—The fact that a man is a negro, Indian, or other racial human being, is not good ground to prevent his burial in a cemetery.⁴⁹

457. *Will, Body, Custody.*—Where no disposition of a body has been made by will, the surviving husband, or wife, or next of kin, has the right to the body for the purpose of burial. But the right of the surviving wife or husband, if they were living together at the time of the death of deceased, is paramount to that of the next of kin.⁵⁰ A right to the custody of the body of a deceased relative and to decide upon the final place of burial where the deceased is un-

⁴⁸*Dwenger v. Geary*, 113 Ind., 106; 14 N. E., 903; *Nance v. Busby*, 91 Tenn., 303; 15 L. R. A., 801.

⁴⁹*Mt. Maria v. Commonwealth*, 81 Pa. St., 235; 22 Am. Rep., 743; *Cemetery Co. v. Walker*, 29 Ky. L. R., 1252; 97 S. W., 34; 7 L. R. A., N. S., 155.

⁵⁰*Larson v. Chase*, 47 Minn., 307; 50 N. W., 238; 14 L. R. A., 85; 28 Am. St. R., 370; *Pettigrew v. P.*, 207 Pa., 313; 56 At., 878; 64 L. R. A., 179.

married, is in his next of kin, and this right will be protected by the courts.⁵¹

458. *Non-Residence, Burial.*—Non-residence does not divest a person of the right to burial with his relatives.⁵²

459. *State, Vacate, Equity, Rule.*—The State may require the removal of the bodies and vacate a cemetery without compensation to lot owners in some extraordinary cases of eminent domain or as a health measure.⁵³ Courts of equity exercise some discretion in cases that do not fall within this rule.⁵⁴ But the superintendent of a cemetery has no right to remove a child without the consent of the father who owns the lot.⁵⁵

460. *Consent, Bishop, Removal.*—With the consent of deceased's husband before the funeral, the father of deceased paid for the lot in which his daughter wished to be buried with her parents. Her mother being dissatisfied with the location, the lot was

⁵¹McEntee v. Bonacum, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633; 66 L. R. A., 440.

⁵²Hook v. Joyce, 94 Ky., 450; 22 S. W., 651; 21 L. R. A., 96.

⁵³Columbus v. C., 82 Wis., 334; 52 N. W., 425; 16 L. R. A., 695; Mt. Hope v. Boston, 158 Mass., 509; 33 N. E., 695; 35 Am. St. R., 515; Kincaid's Appeal, 66 Pa. St., 411; 5 Am. R., 377; Bessimer v. Jenkins, 111 Ala., 135; 56 Am. St. R., 26; 18 So., 565.

⁵⁴Wilson v. Reed, 68 At., 37, N. H.; Wormley v. Wormley, 207 Ill., 411; 60 N. E., 865; 3 L. R. A., N. S., 481.

⁵⁵Thirkfield v. Mountain, 12 Utah, 76; 41 Pac., 564; Wright v. Hollywood, 112 Ga., 884; 38 S. E., 94; 52 L. R. A., 621.

subsequently exchanged for another in the same cemetery; but after preliminary arrangements had been made, the son-in-law applied to a court of equity for a writ restraining the father and the bishop from removing the body. The bishop answered that he was willing to conform to any order of the court. The court held that by acceding to his wife's request and allowing her father to bury her in the first instance, and by standing mute while the arrangements for the removal of the body were being made, the husband had no right thereafter to prevent the removal of his wife's body.⁵⁶

461. *Court, Remove, Consent.*—In a proper case a court may grant a decree to remove the body of a relative from one cemetery to another.⁵⁷ Otherwise no one has the right to exhume or remove a body without the consent of those having charge of the cemetery and of those having the right of burial, as consort or the next of kin. In some States the offense is a felony.⁵⁸ In Nebraska, at least, those who have the legal right to bury a relative may remove his body

⁵⁶*Toppin v. Moriarty*, 59 N. J. Eq., 115; 44 At., 469; 50 Cen. L. J., 21.

⁵⁷*Cohen v. Cong.*, 99 N. Y. S., 732.

⁵⁸*Feeley v. Andrews*, 191 Mass., 313; 77 N. E., 766; *State v. McLean*, 121 N. C., 589; 28 S. E., 140; 42 L. R. A., 721.

from one Catholic cemetery to another without the consent of the bishop.⁵⁹

462. *Crime, Fraud, Exhume, Autopsy.*—In an action on an insurance policy where there is evidence of fraud, as death by poison, a court may order a body exhumed for examination, although the person having the right to control the burial of the body is not a party to the suit.⁶⁰ Public officials have the right to disinter a body to ascertain whether a crime has been committed.⁶¹ But without a coroner's inquest or consent of the surviving consort or next of kin, a doctor has no right to perform an autopsy.⁶²

463. *Tort, Corpse.*—The general rule is that an action of tort may be maintained by the widow or next of kin for the mutilation of a corpse or even for negligently exposing it to the elements.⁶³ In a few cases the right has been denied.⁶⁴

464. *Custodian, Burial, Mutilation.*—In the absence of a widow, a son is the lawful

⁵⁹McEntee v. Bonacum, 66 Neb., 651; 92 N. W., 633; 66 L. R. A., 440.

⁶⁰Mutual, etc., v. Griesa, 156 F., 398.

⁶¹Hayes v. State, 112 Wis., 304; 87 N. W., 1076.

⁶²14 L. R. A., 85; Young v. College of Physicians, 81 Md., 358; 32 At., 177; 31 L. R. A., 540; Meyers v. Clarke, 28 Ky. L., 1000; 90 S. W., 1049; 5 L. R. A., N. S., 727.

⁶³Lindh v. Ry., 99 Minn., 408; 109 N. W., 823; 7 L. R. A., N. S., 1018.

⁶⁴Long v. Ry., 15 Oklahoma, 512; 86 Pac., 289; 6 L. R. A., N. S., 883; Griffith v. Charlotte, 23 S. C., 25; 55 Am. Rep., 1.

custodian of the body of his deceased father for preservation, representation, and burial, and may maintain an action for unlawful mutilation thereof. The sense of outrage and mental suffering resulting directly from the wilful mutilation of the body of a parent, is a proper independent element of compensatory damages.⁶⁵

465. *Property in a Corpse, Mummy, Executors.*—The question of property in a corpse has been generally denied. However, in case of a mummy which has become an object of curiosity, the case may be different. Where a testator ordered his body burned and the executor presented a bill for £321 for doing so, the court disallowed it on the ground that when a man is dead his next of kin or executors have the right to dispose of his body; but that as it is not property, a man has no right to bequeath it for a particular purpose.⁶⁶ Also, where a man was in jail and died during his imprisonment and the jailer refused to give up the body until the debt was paid, the court held that there was no property in the corpse, and therefore there could be no lien upon it and he must surrender it.⁶⁷

⁶⁵Koerber v. Patek, 123 Wis., 453; 102 N. W., 40; Thompson v. State, 105 Tenn., 177; 58 S. W., 213; 80 Am. St. R., 875; 51 L. R. A., 883.

⁶⁶Williams v. Williams, 20 Ch. Div., 659.

⁶⁷Reg. v. Fox, 2 Q. B., 246.

466. *Rights, Duties, Body, Will.*—While there is no property in a dead body so that it may be sold, there are rights and duties out of which may arise tort and criminal actions. The question of the right of a man to dispose of his body by will is not well settled in this country.⁶⁸ There are many cases that hold that a person has the right to make a binding testamentary disposition of his own body after death.⁶⁹ But on the contrary it has been held that one can not by his will confer any right as to the disposition of his body.⁷⁰

467. *Monument, Fence.*—Giving the right to bury in one's cemetery lot carries with it the right to erect a monument; but it does not carry with it the right to fence the cemetery lot or interfere with other graves therein. Therefore, the monument must be of such size and so located and erected as not to interfere with the rights of others.⁷¹

468. *Tombstone, Mother-in-Law.*—A husband has the right to remove a tombstone that his mother-in-law put over his wife's grave, and put up one of his own choice in-

⁶⁸52 Cen. L. J., 141.

⁶⁹O'Donnell v. Slack, 123 Cal., 285; 55 Pacific, 906; 43 L. R. A., 388; Neighbors v. Neighbors, 23 Ky. L., 1433; 65 S. W., 607; Larson v. Chase, 47 Minn., 307; 50 N. W., 238; 14 L. R. A., 85.

⁷⁰Enos v. Snyder, 131 Cal., 68; 63 Pac., 170; 82 Am. St. R., 330; 53 L. R. A., 21.

⁷¹Thompson, v. Deeds, 93 Ia., 228; 61 N. W., 842.

stead.⁷² The general rule is that vaults and tombstones are personal property and may be removed "in good faith and with care and decency" by the next of kin.⁷³

469. *Trees, Authority.*—It is a criminal offense to cut trees in a cemetery without right or authority.⁷⁴

470. *Charitable, Institution, Negligence.*—A Catholic cemetery without capital stock or shares and paying no profits nor dividends, does not come under the head of a charitable institution so as to relieve it from liability for negligence.⁷⁵

471. *Equity, Repair, Injuries.*—A cemetery association may by bill in equity be forced to keep walks and drives in good repair and consequently is liable for injuries resulting from its negligence.⁷⁶

⁷²Durrell v. Haywood, 75 Mass., 248.

⁷³Boham v. Loeb, 107 Ala., 604; 18 So., 300; Hamilton v. State, 30 Ind., 482; Partridge v. First, 39 Md., 631; Fletcher v. Evans, 140 Mass., 24; 2 N. E., 837.

⁷⁴Commonwealth v. Viall, 84 Mass., 512.

⁷⁵Donnelly v. Boston, 146 Mass., 163; 15 N. E., 505.

⁷⁶Houston v. Drew, 13 Tex. Cir. App., 536; 36 S. W., 802.

CHAPTER XXXIV

MISCELLANEOUS

472. *Societies, Law.*—Religious societies organized in connection with a church or congregation are in law civil societies and not ecclesiastical corporations, and are governed by the law of the land. Therefore, the law of fraternities fully covers all questions that arise in such societies. The subject is too comprehensive to be treated at any length here.¹

473. *Society, Bishop.*—A society may expel a member on due notice and a fair trial. The refusal of the bishop to recognize a fraternity organized as a Roman Catholic society, does not prevent the society and its officers from exercising the powers of a religious corporation conferred by law nor prohibit its members from maintaining their religious worship.²

474. *Priest, Doorkeeper, Policemen, Arrest.*—A priest who was in charge of a parish and had control of the temporalities consisting of pew-rents, Sunday and other

¹Robertson v. Bullions, 11 N. Y., 243.

²Canadian v. Palmenter, 180 Mass., 415; 62 N. E., 740.

collections, graveyard, church, school, fees, and donations, on account of disorderly behavior of members issued tickets to those to be admitted and ordered a doorkeeper to prevent others from entering the church. A woman without a ticket and talking loudly, endeavored to force her way into the church, although there were several policemen on duty who attempted to stop her. She was arrested and her husband brought suit for false imprisonment. The court held that a clergyman has a right to keep disturbers out of the church and that the doorkeepers have a right to use sufficient force to carry out the orders of the priest; but when a doorkeeper went beyond those orders by causing the arrest of the woman, he was not acting within the apparent scope of his employment and the priest was not liable.³

475. *Saloon, Church, License.*—A man owned premises that had been occupied as a saloon from 1894. In 1896 the New York law prohibiting saloons to be licensed within 200 feet of a church, except places where liquor traffic had been carried on prior to that time, was passed. In 1898 a church was built within 200 feet of the saloon in question. After the building of the church, the saloon was vacated for about ten days

³*Barabasz v. Kabat*, 86 Md., 23; 37 At., 720.

during a change of saloonkeepers, and an action was brought to revoke the license of the new saloonkeeper. The court held that the incidental interruption of the business did not bring the place within the prohibition of the law, and that the license could not be revoked.⁴

476. *Y. M. C. A.*—The Y. M. C. A. on account of giving lunches, lectures, and having a gymnasium, for which charges are made, is not a charitable institution so as to be exempt from liability in case of negligence. Property is exempt only when used for exempt purposes exclusively.⁵

477. *Students, Vote, Residence.*—Students at a seminary studying for the priesthood do not thereby lose their residence at their homes and are not entitled to vote where a college is located. The fact that they intend to remain for four years, become clergymen, and then go to wherever they may be called, does not give them the right of residence, and there is no distinction between them and any other students away from home at school.⁶ However, a student of full age might become a voter in the col-

⁴In re Hawkins, 165 N. Y., 188; 58 N. E., 884.

⁵Chapin v. Holyoke, 165 Mass., 280; 42 N. E., 1130; Am. & Eng. Cyc. of L., "Taxation."

⁶In re Barry, 164 N. Y., 18; 58 N. E., 12.

lege precinct if he has no other fixed domicile.⁷

478. *"My Wife, Anna Jones," Divorce, Insurance.*—A bequest or devise to "my wife, Anna Jones," is not changed by a divorce without some evidence to prove that the testator did not intend his divorced wife to share in his estate, unless the judgment of divorce made a division of the property. The same is true of a policy of insurance or benefit certificate. However, there are exceptions that weaken the rule and make its application in some States uncertain.⁸

479. *Bells, Sick, Injunction.*—On the complaint of an injured person, a court will issue an injunction restraining the ringing of church, convent, or other bells, at unusual hours or when their noise is injurious to the sick, or when their vibration affects other premises. As the law of nuisances applies in such cases, an exact statement of when the court should issue the injunction or whether the injunction should be temporary or perpetual, can not be given; but when the personal or property rights of others

⁷American Law of Electors, McCrary, sec. 41.

⁸Lansing v. Haynes, 95 Mich., 16; 54 N. W., 699; Baacke v. Baacke, 50 Neb., 18; 69 N., 303; Jones, Jr., estate, 211 Pa., 364; 60 At., 915; 69 L. R. A., 940; White v. B. of A. Y., 124 Ia., 293; 99 N. W., 1071; 66 L. R. A., 164.

are affected, an injunction may be granted. The fact that the bells are chimes or part of a clock does not change the rule.⁹

480. *Marriage, Impediments, Recording.*—Legal marriage may be contracted only between unmarried persons not related within the prohibited degrees of consanguinity or affinity, of lawful age and sufficient mental and physical capacity. Statutes vary greatly. In some States affinity is not considered a legal objection and first cousins may marry; in others, both are prohibited and other limitations of relationship, race, and color are fixed, and registration of the clergymen and licenses to wed are required. Also, the clergyman must report the marriage promptly to the proper office. Fines, penalties, and imprisonment are usually provided for violating the law. Informal marriages may or may not be voidable or void.¹⁰

481. *Charivari, Wedding Pranks.*—Charivari, assaults, and disorderly conduct are unlawful at all times, and can not be

⁹Rogers v. Elliott, 146 Mass., 349; 15 N. E., 768; Davis v. Sawyer, 133 Mass., 289; 43 Am. R., 519; Harrison v. St. Mark's, 12 Phil., 259; Soltau v. DeHeld, 9 Eng. L. & E., 104; Leete v. Pilgrim Cong. Ch., 14 Mo. App., 590.

¹⁰Osborne v. Osborne, New York, Sept. 12, 1908; Landry v. Bellanger, 45 So., 956; 15 L. R. A., N. S., 463; Lawson v. Lawson, 30 Tex. Civ. App., 43; 69 S. W., 246; Schmitt v. Schneider, 109 Ga., 628; 35 S. E., 145.

justified by custom.¹¹ A newly wedded man who was serenaded (charivaried) by his neighbors by firing guns, blowing horns, beating pans, rattling horse-fiddles, etc., after ordering the rioters off fired into the crowd and wounded one of them. On trial for assault with intent to kill, the groom was acquitted. Shooting might not be justifiable in cases where less potent agencies, such as a horsewhip or dogs, are sufficient, or where the immediate protection of person or property does not call for it. The law should be invoked when no exigency for force exists.¹²

482. *Infallibility of Courts.*—When a question of law at issue in a case is duly presented to a supreme court which is the court of last resort, its decision thereon becomes “the law of the case” and is thereafter binding upon the court itself and all the courts inferior to it; and no matter how often that identical case may come before the court on subsequent appeals, the questions already decided therein will not be reconsidered. It is interesting to compare this principle of our courts with Papal infalli-

¹¹14 Cyc, 466.

¹²*Minagham v. State*, 77 Wis., 643; 46 N. W., 894; *Gilmore v. Fuller*, 198 Ill., 130; 65 N. E., 84.

bility.¹³ Courts do not always adhere to the rule.¹⁴

483. *Money Stolen, Bailed or Loaned, Insolvency, Gifts.*—Property stolen by A. or left with him as bailee to be returned in specie, can not be given away by him for charity. Also, when a man is insolvent he has no right to give away any of his property.¹⁵ That has been the rule of law since Coke laid down the maxim: “A man must be just before he is generous.” One is insolvent when his debts exceed the value of his unexempt property.¹⁶ When an insolvent debtor makes a gift, a creditor may sue and recover from the donee; or in a proper case the creditor may force the debtor into bankruptcy to recover the gift.¹⁷ The want of knowledge or good faith of the donee is immaterial and no defense to an action to recover the property.¹⁸

¹³Am. & Eng. Ency. of L., “Stara decisis,” “Res judicata”; 67 Central L. Journal, 255; Pautz v. Plankinton, 126 Wis., 37; 105 N. W., 482; Whittaker v. Mich. M. L. Ins. Co., 83 N. E., 899.

¹⁴Bonacum v. Murphy, 71 Neb., 463; 104 N. W., 180.

¹⁵U. S. Bankruptcy Act, sec. 1, sub-sec. 25.

¹⁶20 Cyc, 457.

¹⁷20 Cyc, 1243; Insolvent Corporations, Wait, sec. 637.

¹⁸20 Cyc, 469.

INDEX

THE REFERENCES ARE TO THE SECTIONS

A

Abandoned cemetery, 449;
property reverts, 295.
Accepting a draft, officer,
162.
Access to cemetery, right
of, 442.
Account, officers must, 297.
Action in church tribunal,
86; for expulsion, 137;
unincorporated party, 217;
slander by deceased, 382.
Acts of majority, when
void, 177.
Adjournment, 181.
Adoption of children, 367.
Adoration, 29.
Adverse possession, ceme-
tery, 446; church prop-
erty, 257.
Aid from Government, 46.
Agent, priest of bishop,
270.
Alabama, bequest for
Masses, 316.
Ambiguity, proof clearing,
326.
Ambiguous provision,
proof, 272.
America, civil and common
law, 17.
Anonymous letter not priv-
ileged, 224.
Answer of priest as wit-
ness, 222.
Appeal, church tribunal, 86;
right of, 206.
Application, for cemetery,
427.

Appointed officers, 121.
Appropriation for hospital,
44; can not be from taxes,
335; indirect, 335, 46, 28,
375.
Argument when privileged,
387, 386.
Arrears, pew rent, member-
ship, 250.
Arrest, authority, damages,
474.
Assault and battery, 387.
Assessment, of pews, 243;
of cemetery void, 293.
Assistance to enforce or-
der, 356.
Association, discipline,
bishop, 454.
Attainder, not lawful, 36.
Attendance, test of member-
ship, 144.
Authority in ancient na-
tions, 3; inferior must
obey, 85, 93; use of force
by priest, 100; court may
decide contested, 112; of
priest as to cemetery, 281;
of sexton in church, 314;
of teacher outside of
school, 355; to cut trees
in cemetery, 469.
Autopsy, authority to
make, 462.

B

Bankruptcy, church, 302.
Bailee, gift of, 483; donor,
483.
Ballot, when required, 149.

Index

- Baptism, how to record, 191.
- Bells, ringing a nuisance, 479.
- Benefit, work for, on Sunday, 409.
- "Benefit of the Clergy," 10.
- Bequest, legatees, religion, 136, 320; purpose of enforceable, 284; laws of state control, 306; consent of heirs to change, 313; mistake may not defeat, 317.
- Birth, how record kept, 191.
- Bible in schools, 29, 49, 218, 347, 348; constitution of sect, 127; constitutional rights, 350; Indian schools, 375.
- Bigamy, unconstitutional, 38; charge of, slander, 384.
- Bishop, superior authority, 81, 83; subject to Pope, 82; discipline of priest, 99; church debts, 169, 261; removal of priest, 199; deed of church land, 287; control over cemetery, 454; removal of bodies, 460; societies, control of, 473.
- Bishop's residence, taxes, 331.
- Blasphemy, a crime, 405, 218.
- Blessed Virgin, 406.
- Board acts as body only, 360; authority outside of school, 355.
- Bodies, change of cemeteries, 450; custody of deed, 457; disposing by will, 466; property in, 465.
- Bologna, law school of, 14.
- Burned church, land title, 294.
- Building, liability of members, 56; subscriptions for, 275; committee, liability, 170; contracts, liability, 233.
- Burial, right of, 113; regulations, 429, 445; non-resident, 458; right to control, 464.
- Burying dogs in cemetery, 452.
- Business, religion, 110; notice of meeting, 176; law will enforce, 230; Sunday, 408; or property, libel of, 394.
- By-laws of sects and church, 22; govern elections, 148, 152; subject to state law, 153; control officers, 153, 159; amending, 252; of cemetery association, 445.

C

- California missions, 268.
- Canon Law, analysis, 6.
- Canons of the church, title, 280.
- Casting vote, chairman, 186.
- Catholic Church, corporation, 58; control of pews in, 239; free pews, reformation, 237; discipline, suits, 208.
- Cemetery, authority over, 281; assessment for taxes, 293; Indian, 372.
- Certificate, cemetery lot, 438; conditions of, 454; of election, effect of, 157.
- Certified copies as evidence, 192.
- Challenge of voter, 147; waiver of, 186.
- "Chances," "fairs," unlawful, 420.

Index

- Change of use of land, 53;
of church government,
67; name of church, 69;
doctrine, membership,
289; burial place, 450.
- Charge for services, 166.
- Charges against member,
202, 389.
- Charitable institutions, 333,
338; liability, 470; trust,
trustee, 325.
- Charity, definition of, 328,
409; Elks, Masons, 333;
of debtor, 483.
- Charivari, unlawful, 481.
- Charter limits corporation,
153; by-laws under, 252;
real estate, 339; of ceme-
tery, 428.
- Chastisement, by teacher,
354.
- Child, rights, duties, 361,
370; expelling from
school, 352; religion of,
365; out of school, 352,
355.
- "Christian Healer," consent
to 417.
- "Christian Scientist," man-
slaughter, 42.
- Christians, who, are, 24.
- Church, definition, 20, 23,
24, 398; secession, heresy,
70, 126; debts of, bishop,
169; removal of, author-
ity, 275; buildings, use of,
276; majority control,
289; Indian churches, 372;
personal property, when,
299; and state, 15; rec-
ords, evidence, 191;
births, baptisms, 191;
when libelous, 381; tribu-
nals, authority, 216.
- "Church of Latter-Day
Saints," 39.
- Citizens, clergy as, 92; In-
dians, states, 371.
- Civil rights, procedure, 207;
state protects, 210; law,
Florida, Louisiana, 17.
- Clerk of church board, au-
thority, 177.
- Clergy, bishop may change,
83; exemptions of, 103;
salaries, 106.
- Clergyman, definition, 31;
duties and rights, 92;
privileged evidence, 224;
undue influence, 318; dis-
ciplinary rights, 386.
- Closing church, 213.
- Color of title, possession,
257.
- Collateral attack, 307.
- Commissioner of Indian
schools, 375.
- Common law and the
church, 12; crimes under,
401.
- Communicants, member-
ship, 144.
- Competent witness, 220.
- Complaint, allegations, 215.
- Conditions, 436.
- Confessions, privacy, 100;
not evidence, 221, 226;
non-sacramental, 223, 224,
225; witness, privilege,
222.
- Confidential communica-
tions, libel, 377.
- Congregation, authority in,
65, insubordinate, 90.
- Conscience, Bible, law, 350.
- Consent, to hold meeting,
179; to sell or mortgage,
264; daughter becoming
nun, 366; to "Christian
Healer," 417; to location
of cemetery, 427; bishop's
to remove body, 460;
court may, 461.
- Consideration, good, 234,
236.

Index

- Constantine, Christians, 9.
 Constitution of a church,
 21, 81, 88; of U. S. and
 Church, 45, 68, 127; mem-
 bers, Bible, 127, 350, 358.
 Consolidation of churches,
 73.
 Contests, how settled, 158;
 suit for bequest, 319; to
 hold meeting, 179.
 Contracts, with churches,
 46, 335, 345; binding
 members, 59; State courts
 enforce, 292; Sunday, 410.
 Contributions to deposed
 priest, 104; right to en-
 joy, 310.
 Control of business of
 church, 72; vests in cor-
 poration, 73; doctrine
 and discipline, 122; under
 state law, 155; board of
 trustees, 161, 279; soci-
 eties' collections, 274;
 cemetery, joint lot, 451.
 Controversy, submission of,
 97.
 Convent, consent of par-
 ents, 366.
 Conditions, what are bind-
 ing, 75; pews, lease, sale,
 242; bequests, deeds, 284,
 313, 321; quit claim of
 heirs, 286.
 Corporation, members, 253;
 bequests to religious, 306;
 name, error, 317.
 Corpse, burial, mutilation,
 463, 466.
 Corrective authority over
 wife, 370.
 Councils of Church, 378.
 Counsel in church tribunal,
 200.
 Courts, state, 60; church
 and state, 216; do not de-
 cide doctrine, 311; re-
 ligion of child, 365.
 Court of equity, church
 title, 212.
 Creditors, securing, 263;
 gifts of debtor, 483;
 bankruptcy, 302.
 Creed, state courts, 211.
 Crime, polygamy, 40;
 church tribunal, 292;
 charging, slander, 388;
 sins distinguished, 396;
 blasphemy is a, 405;
 autopsy to detect, 462.
 Criticisms of clergy, 385.
 Cruel chastisement unlaw-
 ful, 354.
 Curate, appointment of, 53,
 96; salary of, 108.
 Custody of children, 361;
 of wife, 369; of corpse,
 457, 464.
 Custom of church, meet-
 ings, 180.
 Cy-pres doctrine abroga-
 ted, 325.
- D
- Damages, property de-
 stroyed in riot, 52; ex-
 pulsion from society, 188.
 Death, record, proof, 191.
 Debts, unincorporated body,
 54; may be limited by
 law, 74; permission to in-
 cur, 101; individual lia-
 bility, 117; seceders liable
 for, 126; bishop's liability,
 169; mortgage, 261, 263;
 power to settle, 263.
 Decisions of church court,
 88; in submitted case, 97;
 appeal from church, 206;
 final in doctrine, 209.
 Deed by order of court,
 254; description of gran-
 tee, 259; to bishop, ef-
 fect, 262; in priest's name,
 267, 270; conditions in,
 284; cemetery lot, 41;
 form cemetery deed, 438.

Index

- De facto* officers, acts, 165.
 Defenses, law, canon law, 8.
 Deficiency judgment, 232.
 Definitions, 20, 34; excommunication, 131.
 Delegated authority, 82.
 Deposed clergymen, donations to, 104.
 Devise on condition of faith, 135; uncertainty of, 271; of cemetery lot, 435.
 Diocese, state law in, 51; title of church, 266; rules for cemeteries, 455.
 Directors and Bible, 347.
 Direct payment of tax to church, 345.
 Disability of members, 57.
 Discretion of officers, 167.
 Disease from cemetery, 434.
 Discipline and officers, 63; bishop may enforce, 83, 89; members subject to, 90, 381; inferior authority, 308, 381; tribunals of church, 386, 396; physical, unlawful, 387.
 Dismissal of clergyman, 109.
 Disqualified to hold office, 134.
 Dissolution of congregation, 73; funds of church, 78; resulting trust, 327.
 Disturbances at church, 213; crime, punishment, 397.
 Disturbing a religious meeting, 400.
 Diverted trust fund, 298.
 Division of church, 129, 276; title to property, 290.
 Divorce, legacy, insurance, 478.
 Doctor, necessary, 416.
 Doctrine of church, 21, 25; change of effect, 53; condition in deed, 278; pewholders must not dictate, 309; discipline, 93.
 Dog, burying in cemetery, 452.
 Domicile of family, 370.
 Donation conditioned, 41.
 Donor, religion, proof, 272.
 Doorkeeper, exceeding order, 474.
 Drunkenness, dying in, 443.
 Duties of adopted parents, 367; Indian inspectors, 373; to bury dead, 466.
 Dwelling, priest as servant, 98; of family husband's, 370; cemetery near, 430.
- ### E
- Early Christians, law, 7.
 Easement, title, cemetery lot, 435.
 Ecclesiastical corporations, 26; court, 10; matters, courts, 209.
 Education for priesthood, 324; of children, control, 343.
 Elks, 333.
 England and Roman law, 16; confession privileged, 226.
 English law, 17.
 Entries in church records, 189.
 Equity, priest's salary, 301; cemetery, corpses, 459; cemetery repairs, 471.
 Error in deed, 260; latent in devise, 326.
 Established church, 18.
 Establishment of religion, 37.
 Estates, ecclesiastical courts, 11.

Index

- Evidence of incorporation, 64; parish books, 189, 191; certified copies, 192; parol evidence, 273; privileged questions, 221.
- Excommunication, authority, 87; minor is lawful, 87; *non-tolerati* is unlawful, 87; legal effect, 167, 136; libel and slander, 381.
- Excuse, drunkenness, 407.
- Executors, pew rent, 249; custody of corpse, 465.
- Exemptions to clergy, attachment, execution, 118, 432.
- Exempt church property, 329; execution, 432.
- Exhume, crime, fraud, 462.
- Expelled, excommunicated, 87, 120, 167.
- Expulsion, right of church, 137, 139; minority, 141; from society, 188.
- Exercise, religion in school, 29, 346; see "Bible."
- F
- Facilities for negro education, 358.
- Factions trying each other, 112; property of, 211.
- "Fairs" are unlawful, 420.
- Fair trial is natural right, 202.
- Faith, dying in, burial, 113; member must conform, 142.
- False statements, slander, 223; imprisonment, 387; by clergymen, libel, 388.
- Family domicile, 370.
- Father, duties and rights, 361; custody of child, 361, 362; married child, 369.
- Fee, title in, when, 262, 440.
- Fees of priest, 105, 106.
- Fence in cemetery, 467.
- Fishing on Sunday, 408.
- Force to subdue pupil, 356, to expel disturber, 403; remove trespasser, 248.
- Foreign language, 124.
- Forfeiture of membership, 61, 138; provision in will as to, 285; by use excepted, 444.
- Fraternity, members' faith, 136; excommunication of member, 136.
- Fraud, false "prophet", 171; insurance, autopsy, 462.
- Free church seats, regulation, 248.
- Freedom of worship, 142.
- Free exercise of religion, 37.
- Freemason, burial of, 439.
- Funds, of church, 58; dissolved church, 78; division of unlawful, 129; lien on, for money paid, 267; diverting from use, 298.
- Funeral expenses, 229; on Sunday, 411.
- Future uses, devise, 323.
- G
- Gambling, 420.
- General laws, corporations, 62.
- Gifts of a bankrupt, 483.
- God, belief, public office, 48; crimes against, 406.
- Good faith, libel, slander, 383.
- Gratian, jurist, 13.
- Gratuitous services, 337.
- Guardianship, ecclesiastical, 11; religion of ward, 365.

Index

H

Harmony, want of, 290.
 Hearing, fair trial, 139; evidence, 202, 219.
 Hearsay evidence, 202, 219.
 Heirs and assigns, cemetery, 441.
 Heresy, legal status, 312.
 Hold over officers, 150.
 Hospitals, public money, 44; not taxable, 331.
 Hostile to religion, 41.
 Hypocrite, slander, 389.

I

Identity of name or party, 256.
 Illegal action, void, 141.
 Illegitimate, custody, 362.
 Immoral character, child, 352.
 Impediments, marriage, 480.
 Imprisonment, false, 387.
 Improvements, cemetery lot, 447.
 Income perquisites, 105.
 Incorporated, liability, 119; powers, purposes, 125; charter, by-laws, 154.
 Incorporation of church, 62, 64; congregation, 65, 77.
 Incorporeal hereditament, pew, 238.
 Independent society, status, 124.
 Indians, wards, citizens, 371.
 Indigent soldiers, tombstones, 424.
 Induction, informal, 96.
 Infallibility, judges, 482; comparisons, 482.
 Infancy, marriage, convent, 366, 368.
 Inherits, right of burial, 437.
 Injunction, 479, 448, 312, 213, 140, 99.

Injuries, liability, 471.
 Innovations of doctrine, 308.
 Insane, libel, slander, 383.
 Inscriptions, offensive, 443.
 Inspectors of election, 186; of Indian schools, 373.
 Institutions, charitable, 328; damage suits, 336, 470; public and private, 341.
 Instrument of punishment, 364.
 Insubordinate, discipline, 90.
 Insubordination, trial, 139.
 Insurance, divorce, 478.
 Interest, adverse of officer, 160; must have to sue, 217.
 Interrupt religious service, 404.

J

Jews, constitution, 12; Sunday, Sabbath, 412.
 Judge of church court, 207; may question witness, 222.
 Judicial notice, 219; not of church law, 265.
 Jurisdiction, church court, 196; notice of trial, 303; U. S. cemeteries, 422.
 Juror of church court, 207.
 Justification, libel, slander, 395.

K

Key, evidence of possession, 169.
 Kin, cemetery rights, 437, 441, 449, 453; custody of corpse, 457, 463, 464; damages for mutilation, 463.

L

Land, vested titles, 240; Texan church, 269; quantity limitation, 283, 305.
 Language, libel, slander, 383.

Index

- Law and religion, 1; religious liberty, 415.
 Lay members, officers, 121.
 Lease of pews, 248; exempt property, 300; with government, 345.
 Leave to purchase, 280.
 Legal notice, 71; rights, church courts, 198.
 Legatee, uncertain, 271, 322, 323.
 Legitimized child, 363.
 Liability of individuals, 54.
 Libel and slander, 377, 382; what may be, 377, 395.
 Liberty, juvenile, 376.
 License to do an act, 454; revoking, resisting, 475.
 Lien for purchase money, 301.
 Limits of cemetery, 430.
 Limited debt by by-laws, 74; authority of inferior, 88.
 Limitation, statutes of 206; land holding, 283, 305.
 Liquor, libel and slander, 384; near religious meeting, 404.
 Loan to priest for church, 173.
 Local corporation, power, 84.
 Lord's Prayer, schools, 346, 218.
 Lots given as subscription, 255; cemetery, title, 440.
 Lots isolated, taxed, 330.
- M**
- Mail, prohibited, 419.
 Major excommunication, 132.
 Majority, what is, 80, 146, 151, 185; unlawful acts, 128, 151, 289; board, committee, 360.
 Malice, libel and slander, 377.
 Management, corporation, 57; temporal affairs, 66; factions, 211.
 Mandamus, when issued, 140.
 Manumission of child, 368.
 Marriage, record of, 191; infants, consent, 368; Sunday promise, 410; impediments, 480; public school pupil, 357.
 Maryland, cemetery law, 426.
 Mass defined, 29.
 Masses, bequests for, 316.
 Masonic Order, charity, 333.
 Materials, liability, 56.
 Maternal relatives, child, 361.
 Meetings of corporation, 80; notice, time, place, 176; consent, 60, 179.
 Members, corporation, 65, 253; slander of, 378; cemetery owners, 428, 445.
 Membership in church, 114; society members, 61; officers, 156; condition, bequest, 320.
 Methodist division, 130; coalition, 310; Presbyterians, 310.
 Middle Ages, growth of law, 12.
 Minister, definition, 32; authority of Protestant, 81; deposed, 104; dismissal of, 109.
 Minor, not church voter, 115 (see infant); ex-communication, 87, 131.
 Minutes, evidence, how kept, 189.
 Misnomer, proof, 256.
 Missions, California, 268.
 Mississippi, bigotry, 50, 334.

Index

- Mistake, in deed or will, 317.
 Misuse of property, 291.
 Money, officers, 164; stolen title, gift, 483; responsibility for, 172; gift to charity, 483; sewing circle, 175; congregation, 274; advanced by priest, 109.
 Monks, land, 268.
 Monuments, free, 423, 424; offensive, 443, 467; injuring, 421, 423, 429.
 Mortgage, foreclosure, 232; bishop's authority, 261; cemetery lot, 432; church property, 264.
 Mortmain, where in force, 340.
 Mother, child, 362, 366.
 Mother Church, heresy, 122.
 Mother-in-law, tombstone, 468.
 Mummy, property in, 465.
 Murder, correcting child, 364.
 Mutilation of corpse, 462, 463, 464.
 "My wife, Anna Jones," will, insurance, 478.
- ### N
- Name, change of corporate, 69; importance, record, 195; error in bequest or deed, 317.
 Natural Justice, influence, 5.
 Necessaries, what are, 416.
 Necessity, work of, 409.
 Negligence, liability, 336, 470.
 Negroes, burial of, 456.
 Newspaper, criticism of priest, 385; criticism of dead, 393.
 New York church law, 50.
 Non-baptized, burial, 443.
 Non-members, burial of, 443; officers, 116.
 Non-residence, right of burial, 458.
 Non-slave-holding, Methodists, 130.
 Note, authority to make, 160; when church bound, 163; signers bound, 170.
 Notice, legal, 71, 176, 264; due notice necessary, 146, 176; special meeting, 178, 264; service of, 180; waiver of, 205; given on Sunday, 410.
 Nuns, individual property, 342.
 Nuisance, cemetery, 434.
- ### O
- Obituary, libel, 392.
 Object of juvenile courts, 376.
 Obscene language, mail, 419.
 Offense at common law, 401; under statutes, 396.
 Office, religious qualifications, 48; membership qualifications, 156.
 Officers, duties, rights, 63; non-members, 156, 116; libel, 392.
 Official communication, libel, 379.
 Ohio, Bible, 347.
 Overdraft, authority, 160.
 Orphan asylums, public money, 344.
- ### P
- Parent and child, duties, rights, 343; direct studies, 353.
 Parish, definition, 30; incorporating, 51; pastor's relation, 91.

Index

- Parishioner, definition, 30.
 Parsonage, use, 53; rented, taxes, 332.
 Parochial schools, 343.
 Partners, unincorporated church, 54.
 Parties to suits, 76, 214.
 Pastoral duties, slander, 380.
 Pastor, liability for salary, 55; relations terminated, 91.
 Paying money to deposed clergy, 213.
 Permission from superior, 101.
 Personalty, church on rollers, 299.
 Perversion of property, 291.
 Persecutions, promoted law, 8.
 Pew, right to occupy, 242, 244; removal from, 247.
 Pew rent of deceased, 249; qualification of voter, 250.
 Pew rights, 231-250.
 Philosophical foundations of law, 4.
 Physician, Sunday, 411; Christian Scientist, 42, 417; furnishing for family, 416.
 Place, notice of meeting, 143.
 Police power, cemeteries, 429.
 Politics, minister, arrest, 418.
 Poll list of church voters, 145.
 Policemen, arrest, 474.
 Pollution of water, 431.
 Pope, superior authority, 82.
 Possession, key indicates, 168.
 Powers of corporation, 164.
 Prayer in school, 348; meeting, notice, 187.
 Presbyterians and Methodists, 310.
 Preserve order, priest, 403.
 Preside, who may, 159.
 President, Indians, trade, 374.
 Presumptions, church law, 228.
 Presiding officer, 183.
 Presumed authority, 101.
 Priest, bishop not liable for salary, 98; fellow-servant of bishop, 95; semi-servant, 98; removal, trial, 99, 199; borrowing money for church, 173; possession of, 98, 197; deed in priest's name, 267; agent of bishop, 270; excommunication, slander, 380; newspaper criticism, 385; using force, order, 403; excluding disorderlies, 474; witness, privilege, 221, 222; answers, 222; suits by and against, 208.
 Priesthood, discipline, 89; bequest to educate for, 324.
 Principal service, notice, 180.
 Private school, disturbing, 399.
 Privacy, confessor, 100.
 Privileges of church court, 196; witness, 221, 222; cemetery, 441.
 Privileged, confessions, 221; official communications, 379.
 Probable cause, slander, arrest, 390.
 Procedure in church court, 207.
 Process to obtain jurisdiction, 303.
 Profanity, a crime, 407.

Index

- Profane language in church, 397; swearer, libel, 393.
 Promise, consideration, 234, 236.
 Proof of the notice, 182; crime, 407.
 Proper record in parish, 194.
 Property, title in whom, 63; confiscation, 94; execution against, 118; custody of, 197; factions, 211; restrictions on amount, 304; of nuns, 342; in a corpse, 465.
 Protest against burial, 453.
 Protestant, who is a, 43; New Hampshire, 43; superior authority, 81; services in schools, 29; teacher, taxes for, 47.
 Public institutions, support, 341; cemeteries, 433; school Bible, 348; religious services in, 29; residence of pupils, 359; health, cemetery, 434.
 Punishment in school, 354, 355; by parent, 364.
 Purposes of a gift or bequest, 278; acquired for church, 282; leased lands, 300; exempt from taxes, 329.
- Q**
- Quarrel, secession, 130.
 Quasi-public corporations, 26.
 Quit-claim, conditions, 286.
 Quorum, number necessary, 80; who counted, 146; majority, 185, 80, 146.
- R**
- Rations for Indian schools, 375.
 Real estate taxes, 51; purposes, held for, 282; changing purpose, 339.
 Rebuilding, pewholders, 245.
 Rector or pastor, 33.
 Rector, induction, 96; charges against, 384.
 Record, keeping, 195.
 Recording marriage, 480.
 Redress of priest, dismissal, 199.
 Reformation and law, 13; pews rented, sold, 237.
 Reformatories, juvenile courts, 376.
 Regular church organization, 70, 111.
 Regulation of cemeteries, 433.
 Relation of pastor to parish, 91.
 Relatives, abandoned cemetery, 449.
 Religion, ancient, 2; corporations, 26; definition, 34; Christian, 24; influence on law, 1; crime under, 40; anti-religion, freedom, 41; guardian proselyte, 365; crimes against, 406.
 Religious garb, 28, 49; liberty, 18, 28, 49, 415; membership, 110, 111; service, consideration, 230; tests, 35; tolerance, 18, 28; society, 20, 23; worship, 29.
 Remedies in church court, 204.
 Remodeling, pewholders, 245.
 Removal, of clergy, 201; of animal carcasses, 452; of building, 275; of corpse, 460, 461.
 Rented pews, 237; parsonage, 332; priest's rights, 240.
 Repair of cemetery, 471.
 Repeating slander, 395.

Index

- Residence of students, 477.
Res judicata, 482.
 Restrictions on property,
 304; corporation, 249.
 Residents of district, 359.
 Resulting trust, 327.
 Revenues of parish, 279.
 Revert, lands when, 294, 295.
 Revocable license, 454.
 Reorganization of corpora-
 tion, 79.
 Ridicule of holy beings, 406.
 Right, natural, law, 3; con-
 stitutional, 43; possession,
 key, 168; vested property,
 292, 210; adoption, child,
 367; burial, 437, 439;
 custody of corpse, 466;
 to occupy a pew, 242.
 Riot, county liable, 52.
 "Robbed," libel, slander,
 389.
 Rome, source of law, 5.
 Roman Catholic Church, 82.
 Roman law in England, 16.
 Rules of church, 114; voters
 in church, 184; evidence,
 193, 219-229; title in name
 of bishop, 266; diocesan,
 cemeteries, 455.
 Sabbath, violation of, 218.
 Sacraments, slander, 391.
 Salary, priest's, 55, 95; lien
 for, 301.
- ### S
- Sale in perpetuity, of pew,
 241; of church property,
 258.
 Saloon near church, 475.
 Schism, secession, 130.
 School, Indian, 372, 375;
 public, 343, 344; paro-
 chial, 343; house, church,
 351; master, authority,
 355; moneys, orphanages,
 344.
 Seats, free, 248.
- Secession, result, 72, 130;
 property, funds, 123, 319;
 debts of church, 126.
 Secret societies, 221.
 Sect, definitions, 27, 58, 94,
 313.
 Sectarianism, 27, 28, 29.
 Sectarian, 28; Bible, 375.
 Secular courts and church,
 204; matters, doctrinal,
 84; work, Sunday, 413.
 Selling pew on execution,
 246.
 Sentence, publishing libel,
 133.
 Sepulture, right of, 140.
 Sermon, slander, 388.
 Servant, priest of bishop, 98.
 Services, pay for, 108;
 wife's in home, 370; di-
 vine, disorder, 402; re-
 ligious, 29.
 Seventh-Day observers, 412.
 Sewing circle, moneys, 175.
 Sexton, salary, 174; author-
 ity in church, 314.
 Shakers, property of, 58.
 Sick, bells disturbing, 479.
 Signature, "Nalty Family,"
 234.
 Sins and crimes, 396.
 Sisters, hospital, public
 money, 44.
 Slander at trial, 203.
 Slave-holding, Methodists,
 130.
 Smoking in church, 397.
 Societies, members, 61; dis-
 tinct from congregation,
 124; Sunday meetings,
 413; governed by laws,
 472; bishop's control of,
 473; secret, 221.
 Sold pews, 237.
 Soldiers' tombstones, 423.
 Sovereignty, meaning, 38.
 Spanish territory, church,
 277.

Index

- Special damages, slander,** 394.
Special law, incorporation, 62; meeting, notice, 178; purpose, money given for, 235.
Spiritual authority, 87.
Standard of doctrine, 25, 29.
Stara decisis, 482.
State authority, cemeteries, 425.
States, each sovereign, 38; restrictions in church lands, 304; education, books, 343, 349; cemeteries, 459, 421.
Statutes, wills, bequests, 315; cemeteries, 421, 426.
Statutory law, crimes,
Stipulation, cemetery, 454.
Strangers, voting, 146; burial in cemetery, 443; stranger in lot, 453.
Students, voters, where, 477.
Studies, control of school, 353.
Subordinate organization, 125.
Subsequent laws to constitution, 68.
Subscriptions, right to solicit, 102; unpaid, liability, 119, 234; consideration, 234, 236; lot given as, 255; Sunday, 411; special purpose of, 235.
Successors, officers, 150, 158; bishop's, 287.
Suits, parties, 76, 217; must have right, 76, 94, 235; in name of one for others, 214; prevent perverted use, 291; priest, 208.
Sunday, services in school, 351; violations of, 408; when begins and ends, 414.
Sunday school, church, 29, 398.
Superioress, liability, 172.
Supporting church, state, 334.
Support, test of membership, 111.
Suspension by bishop, 201.
Surgeon at hospital, 337.

T

- Tax to support Protestantism,** 47; on pews, 243; incorporation, 51.
Taxes, bishop's residence, 265, 331.
Teacher, religious exercise, 346; studies of pupils, 353.
Temporal affairs, corporation, 66, 309.
Term of office, 158.
Testimony, church court, 203; on trial privileged, 386.
Test oath, unconstitutional, 36.
Texan Revolution, church, 269.
Text-books, board controls, 349.
Thanks as pay, 166.
Theory of church crimes, 405.
Time of meeting, 143; condition, deed, gift, 284; disturbance of meeting, 402.
Title, deed, 254; adverse possession, 257; proof of, 265, 266, 280; monks in California, 268; divided church, 290; mortmain, 340; cemetery lot, 439.
Tobacco, use of, slander, 384.
Tolling bell, slander, 392; when nuisance, 479.

Index

- Tombstones, 423, 424; right to put up, 468.
 Torts, church courts, 292; corpse, mutilating, 463.
 Trades taught Indians, 374.
 Traffic, disturbing meeting, 404.
 Treasurer, authority of, 162.
 Trees, cutting in cemetery, 469.
 Trespass in cemetery, 429, 448.
 Tribunals, church, 19; decision of, 97; procedure privileged, 377, 386.
 Trial, injunction against, 99; church, lawful, 197; counsel for parties, 200; judgment, 201; proceedings privileged, 203.
 True religion, 2, 311.
 Trust, enforcing, 60; fraud creating, 171; courts of equity, 212; sale in perpetuity, 241; bishop, land, 262, 287; evidence of, 273; vests in whom, 278; distinguished, 296; holding for others, 340.
 Trustees of church, 58; disqualified, 134; duties and powers, 58, 155; note by trustees, 163; compensation of, 166; bequests to, 251; vacancies, how filled, 288.
 Trust funds, 297.
 Two-family lot in cemetery, 451.
- ### U
- Uncertainty, legatees, 271, 322, 323.
 Undertaker, duties, rights, 314.
 Undue influence of clergy, 318.
 Uniformity, 190.
- Unincorporated church, 85, 117; liability of members, 251; who may manage, 154.
 Unincorporated congregation, 217; parish, 117.
 United States, 422, 227.
 Usages, pew rent, perquisites, 105; election, 148; proof of church, 228.
 Use, special by deed or devise, 53; for church, pews, 240; of parish buildings, 276; distinguished, 296; forfeited, how, 444.
- ### V
- Vacancy in office, 288.
 Vacate cemetery, 459.
 Vested rights, 294; forfeiture, 72, 294.
 Violation of discipline, 402.
 Virgin, Blessed, mail, 406.
 Void, devise or gift, 135; elections, 143, 177.
 Voire dire examination, 222, 225.
 Vote of excommunication, 133; students at college, 477. (See "Ballot," "Usage.")
 Voters, qualifications, 144, 184, 250; poll list of, 145; challenge of, 186.
 Votes, cast, majority, 151; inspectors, 186; illegal, effect, 186.
 Vows, property rights, 342.
- ### W
- Wages of Sisters, 49; of sexton, 174.
 Waiver of notice, 205; challenge, 186.
 Warden, wages, 174; authority, 174.

Index

- Wards, Indians are, 371;
religion of, 365.
Wedding pranks, unlawful,
481.
Well, cemetery polluting,
431.
White children, public
schools, 357.
Will, conditions, 285; under
statutes, 315; slander by
will, 382; disposing of
corpse, 457, 466.
Wisconsin's statutes, 50.
Wisconsin Industrial School
for Girls, 28.
Withdrawal from church,
127.
Witness in church trial,
207; civil courts, 222.
Worship, who determines,
308; religious, 29.
Written notice required,
187.

Y

- Y. M. C. A., taxes, 476.

STANDARD CATHOLIC BOOKS

PUBLISHED BY

BENZIGER BROTHERS,

CINCINNATI:
343 MAIN ST.

NEW YORK:
36-38 BARCLAY ST.

CHICAGO:
211-213 MADISON ST.

Books marked *net* are such where ten per cent. must be added for postage. Thus a book advertised at *net* \$1 00 will be sent postpaid on receipt of \$1.10. Books not marked *net* will be sent postpaid on receipt of advertised price.

DOCTRINE, INSTRUCTION, DEVOTION.

ABANDONMENT. CAUSSADE, S.J.	<i>net</i> , 0 50
ADORATION OF BLESSED SACRAMENT. TESNIERE.	<i>net</i> , 1 25
ALPHONSUS LIGUORI, WORKS OF, ST. 22 vols. Each,	<i>net</i> , 1 50
ANECDOTES ILLUSTRATING THE CATECHISM. SPIRAGO.	<i>net</i> , 1 50
ANGLICAN ORDINATIONS. SEMPLE.	<i>net</i> , 0 35
ART OF PROFITING BY OUR FAULTS. TISSOT.	<i>net</i> , 0 50
BIBLE HISTORY.	<i>net</i> , 0 50
BIBLE HISTORY, EXPLANATION. NASH.	<i>net</i> , 1 60
BIBLE STORIES. Paper, 0.10; cloth,	0 20
BIBLE, THE HOLY.	1 00
BOOK OF THE PROFESSED. Vol. I, II & III. Each,	<i>net</i> , 0 75
BOYS' AND GIRLS' MISSION BOOK. By the Redemptorist Fathers.	0 35
BREAD OF LIFE, THE. Complete Communion Book.	<i>net</i> , 0 75
CATECHISM EXPLAINED, THE. SPIRAGO-CLARKE.	<i>net</i> , 2 50
CATHOLIC BELIEF. FEA DI BRUNO. Paper, <i>net</i> , 0.15; cloth,	<i>net</i> , 0 35
CATHOLIC CEREMONIES. DURAND. Paper, <i>net</i> , 0.15; cloth,	<i>net</i> , 0 35
CATHOLIC GIRLS' GUIDE. LASANCE.	<i>net</i> , 1 00
CATHOLIC PRACTICE AT CHURCH AND AT HOME. KLAUDER.	<i>net</i> , 0 40
Paper, <i>net</i> , 0.20; cloth,	0 40
CATHOLIC TEACHING FOR CHILDREN. WRAY.	0 30
CATHOLIC WORSHIP. BRENNAN, LL.D. Paper, 0.20; cloth,	<i>net</i> , 0 35
CEREMONIAL FOR ALTAR BOYS. BRITT, O.S.B.	<i>net</i> , 0 75
CHARACTERISTICS OF TRUE DEVOTION. GROU, S.J.	0 60
CHILD OF MARY. Prayer-Book for Children.	<i>net</i> , 2 00
CHRISTIAN APOLOGETICS. DEVIVIER.	<i>net</i> , 1 50
CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE, SPIRAGO'S METHOD OF.	<i>net</i> , 0 60
CHRISTIAN EDUCATION. O'CONNELL.	<i>net</i> , 0 25
CHRISTIAN FATHER. CRAMER. Paper, <i>net</i> , 0.13; cloth,	<i>net</i> , 0 25
CHRISTIAN MOTHER. CRAMER. Paper, <i>net</i> , 0.13; cloth,	<i>net</i> , 0 10
CHRISTIAN SCHOOL. McFAUL. Paper,	0 05
CONFESSION. Paper,	0 25
CONFESSION AND ITS BENEFITS. GIRARDEY.	0 05
CONFIRMATION. Paper,	<i>net</i> , 0 25
COUNSELS OF ST. ANGELA.	<i>net</i> , 2 00
DEFENCE OF THE SEVEN SACRAMENTS, HENRY VIII.	<i>net</i> , 1 25
O'DONOVAN.	<i>net</i> , 1 25
DEVOTION TO SACRED HEART OF JESUS. NOLDIN, S.J.	<i>net</i> , 1 25
DEVOTIONS AND PRAYERS FOR THE SICK-ROOM. KREBS,	<i>net</i> , 1 25
C.S.S.R. Cloth,	<i>net</i> , 1 25
DEVOTIONS AND PRAYERS OF ST. ALPHONSUS.	<i>net</i> , 0 40
DEVOTIONS FOR FIRST FRIDAY. HUGUET.	<i>net</i> , 1 50
DIGNITY AND DUTIES OF THE PRIEST. LIGUORI.	<i>net</i> , 1 60
DIVINE GRACE. WIRTH.	<i>net</i> , 1 50
DIVINE OFFICE. LIGUORI.	<i>net</i> , 1 00
EDUCATION OF OUR GIRLS. SHIELDS.	<i>net</i> , 0 25
EPISTLES AND GOSPELS. Large print.	

EUCCHARISTIC CHRIST. TESNIERE.	net, 1 25
EUCCHARISTIC SOUL ELEVATIONS. STADELMAN.	net, 0 50
EXPLANATION OF THE BALTIMORE CATECHISM. KINKEAD.	net, 1 00
EXPLANATION OF THE GOSPELS. LAMBERT. Paper, net, 0.15; cloth,	net, 0 35
EXPLANATION OF THE HOLY SACRAMENTS. ILLUSTR.	net, 1 00
EXPLANATION OF THE MASS. COCHEM.	net, 1 25
EXPLANATION OF THE OUR FATHER AND THE HAIL MARY. BRENNAN, LL.D.	net, 0 75
EXPLANATION OF THE PRAYERS AND CEREMONIES OF THE MASS, ILLUSTRATED. LANSLOTS, O.S.B.	net, 1 25
EXPLANATION OF THE SALVE REGINA. LIGUORI.	net, 0 75
EXTREME UNCTION. Paper,	0 10
FIRST COMMUNICANT'S MANUAL.	0 50
FLOWERS OF THE PASSION. TH. DE JESUS-AGONISANT.	0 50
FOLLOWING OF CHRIST. KEMPIS.	
With Reflections,	0 50
Without Reflections,	0 45
Edition de Luxe,	1 25
FOUR LAST THINGS, THE. Meditations. COCHEM.	net, 0 75
GARLAND OF PRAYER. With Nuptial Mass. Leather.	0 90
GENERAL CONFESSION MADE EASY. KONINGS, C.S.S.R. Flexible.	0 15
GENERAL PRINCIPLES OF RELIGIOUS LIFE. VERHEYEN, O.S.B.	net, 0 30
GIFT OF THE KING.	0 60
GLORIES OF DIVINE GRACE. SCHEEBEN.	net, 1 60
GLORIES OF MARY. LIGUORI. 2 vols.	net, 3 00
Popular ed. 1 vol.	net, 1 25
GLORIES OF THE SACRED HEART. HAUSHERR, S.J.	net, 1 25
GOFFINE'S DEVOUT INSTRUCTIONS. 140 Illustrations. Cloth,	1 00
GOLDEN SANDS. Little Counsels for the Sanctification and Hap- piness of Daily Life. Third, Fourth and Fifth Series. Each,	net, 0 50
GREAT ENCYCLICAL LETTERS OF POPE LEO XIII.	net, 2 25
GREAT MEANS OF SALVATION. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
GREAT SUPPER OF GOD, THE. COBBE, S.J.	net, 1 25
GREETINGS OF THE CHRIST-CHILD — Poems.	0 60
GUIDE FOR SACRISTANS.	net, 0 85
GUIDE TO CONFESSION AND COMMUNION.	net, 0 50
HANDBOOK OF THE CHRISTIAN RELIGION. WILMERS, S.J.	net, 1 50
HARMONY OF THE RELIGIOUS LIFE. HEUSER.	net, 1 25
HELP FOR THE POOR SOULS IN PURGATORY.	net, 0 50
HELPS TO A SPIRITUAL LIFE. SCHNEIDER, S.J.	net, 1 25
HIDDEN TREASURE. ST. LEONARD of Port Maurice.	net, 0 50
HISTORY OF ECONOMICS. DEWE.	net, 1 50
HISTORY OF CATHOLIC EDUCATION IN THE U. S. BURNS.	net, 1 25
HISTORY OF THE MASS. O'BRIEN.	net, 1 25
HOLY EUCHARIST. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
HOLY HOUR OF ADORATION. STANG.	net, 0 50
HOLY MASS. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
HOW TO COMFORT THE SICK. KREBS, C.S.S.R.	net, 1 25
HOW TO MAKE THE MISSION. By a Dominican Father. Paper,	0 10
ILLUSTRATED PRAYER-BOOK FOR CHILDREN.	0 35
IMITATION OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN MARY. BENNETT-GLADSTONE.	
Plain Edition.	net, 0 50
Edition de luxe,	net, 1 50
IMITATION OF THE SACRED HEART. ARNOUDT, S.J.	net, 1 25
IMMACULATE CONCEPTION, THE. LAMBING, LL.D.	0 35
INCARNATION, BIRTH, AND INFANCY OF CHRIST. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
INDULGENCES. A PRACTICAL GUIDE TO. BERNAD, O.M.I.	net, 0 75
IN HEAVEN WE KNOW OUR OWN. BLOT, S.J.	net, 0 60
INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE CATHOLIC FATHER. EGGER.	net, 0 50
INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE CATHOLIC MOTHER. EGGER.	net, 0 50
INSTRUCTIONS FOR CATHOLIC YOUTH.	net, 0 50
INSTRUCTIONS FOR FIRST COMMUNICANTS. SCHMITT.	net, 0 60
INSTRUCTIONS ON COMMANDMENTS AND SACRAMENTS.	
LIGUORI. Paper, net, 0.13; cloth,	net, 0 25
INTERIOR OF JESUS AND MARY. GROU. 2 vols.	net, 2 00
INTRODUCTION TO A DEVOUT LIFE. ST. FRANCIS DE SALES.	net, 0 50
LESSONS OF THE KING.	0 60
LETTERS OF ST. ALPHONSUS DE LIGUORI. 4 vols., each vol., net,	1 50

LIGHT FOR NEW TIMES. FLETCHER.	net, 0 60
LITTLE ALTAR BOYS' MANUAL.	0 25
LITTLE BOOK OF SUPERIORS.	net, 0 75
LITTLE CHILD OF MARY. A Small Prayer-Book.	0 35
LITTLE MANUAL OF ST. ANTHONY. LASANCE. Illustrated.	0 25
LITTLE MANUAL OF ST. JOSEPH. LINGS.	0 25
LITTLE MONTH OF MAY. McMAHON. Flexible.	net, 0 25
LITTLE MONTH OF THE SOULS IN PURGATORY.	net, 0 25
LITTLE OFFICE OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION.	0 05
LITTLE PICTORIAL LIVES OF THE SAINTS. New cheap edition.	1 25
LOVER OF SOULS, THE. BRINKMEYER.	net, 1 00
MANUAL OF THE HOLY EUCHARIST. LASANCE.	net, 0 75
MANUAL OF THE HOLY FAMILY.	net, 0 60
MANUAL OF THE HOLY NAME.	0 50
MANUAL OF THE SACRED HEART, NEW.	0 50
MANUAL OF ST. ANTHONY, NEW.	net, 0 50
MANUAL OF THEOLOGY FOR THE LAITY. GEIERMANN.	
Paper, net, 0.20; cloth,	net, 0 40
MARIAE COROLLA. Poems. HILL.	net, 1 25
MARY THE QUEEN.	0 60
MASS DEVOTIONS AND READINGS ON THE MASS. LASANCE.	net, 0 75
MEDITATIONS FOR ALL DAYS OF YEAR. HAMON, S.S. 5 vols.	net, 5 00
MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY. BAXTER.	net, 1 50
MEDITATIONS FOR EVERY DAY. VERCROYSE, S.J. 2 vols.	net, 3 50
MEDITATIONS FOR MONTHLY RETREATS.	net, 1 25
MEDITATIONS FOR USE OF SECULAR CLERGY. CHAIGNON.	net, 4 50
MEDITATIONS FOR THE USE OF SEMINARIANS AND PRIESTS. Vol. I. BRANCHEREAU.	net, 1 00
MEDITATIONS FOR RETREATS. ST. FRANCIS DE SALES.	net, 0 75
MEDITATIONS ON THE LIFE, THE TEACHINGS, AND THE PASSION OF JESUS CHRIST. ILG-CLARKE. 2 vols.	net, 3 50
MEDITATIONS ON THE MONTH OF OUR LADY.	net, 0 75
MEDITATIONS ON THE PASSION OF OUR LORD.	0 50
METHOD OF CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE, SPIRAGO'S. MESSMER.	net, 1 50
MIRACLES OF OUR LORD.	0 60
MISCELLANY. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
MISSION BOOK FOR THE MARRIED. GIRARDEY, C.S.S.R.	0 50
MISSION BOOK FOR THE SINGLE. GIRARDEY, C.S.S.R.	0 50
MISSION BOOK OF REDEMPTORIST FATHERS. LIGUORI.	0 50
MOMENTS BEFORE THE TABERNACLE. RUSSELL, S.J.	net, 0 50
MONTH, NEW, OF THE HOLY ANGELS. ST. FRANCIS DE SALES.	net, 0 25
MONTH OF MAY. DEBUSSI, S.J.	net, 0 50
MONTH OF THE SOULS IN PURGATORY, The Little "Golden Sands."	net, 0 25
MORAL BRIEFS. STAPLETON.	net, 1 25
MORES CATHOLICI; or, Ages of Faith. DIGBY. 4 vols.	25 00
(Easy payment plan, \$1.00 down; \$2.00 a month.)	
MOST HOLY ROSARY. CRAMER, D.D.	net, 0 50
MY FIRST COMMUNION, the Happiest Day of My Life. BRENNAN.	net, 0 75
MY LITTLE PRAYER-BOOK. Illustrated.	0 12
NEW MONTH OF THE HOLY ANGELS.	net, 0 25
NEW SUNDAY-SCHOOL COMPANION.	0 25
NEW TESTAMENT. Cheap Edition.	
32mo, flexible cloth,	net, 0 15
NEW TESTAMENT. Illustrated Edition.	
16mo, printed in two colors, with 100 full-page illustrations,	net, 0 60
NEW TESTAMENT. India Paper Edition.	
American Seal, limp, round corners, gilt edges,	net, 0 90
NEW TESTAMENT. Large Print Edition.	
12mo, large,	net, 0 75
NEW TESTAMENT STUDIES. CONATY, D.D.	0 60
OFF TO JERUSALEM. BENZIGER.	net, 1 00
OFFICE, COMPLETE, OF HOLY WEEK.	0 45
Cheap Edition, cloth, cut flush,	0 20
OUR FAVORITE DEVOTIONS. LINGS.	net, 0 75
OUR FAVORITE NOVENAS. LINGS.	net, 0 75
OUR MONTHLY DEVOTIONS. LINGS.	net, 1 25
OUR OWN WILL. ALLEN, D.D.	net, 0 75
PARADISE ON EARTH OPENED TO ALL. NATALE, S.J.	net, 0 50

PARISH PRIEST ON DUTY, THE. HEUSER.	net, 0 60
PASSION, A FEW SIMPLE AND BUSINESS-LIKE WAYS OF DEVOTION TO THE. HILL, C.P.	0 25
PASSION AND DEATH OF JESUS CHRIST. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
PASSION FLOWERS. Poems. HILL.	net, 1 25
PASSION, THOUGHTS AND AFFECTIONS ON, FOR EVERY DAY OF THE YEAR. BERGAMO.	net, 2 00
PEARLS FROM FABER. BRUNOWE.	net, 0 50
PEARLS OF PRAYER.	0 35
PERFECT RELIGIOUS, THE. DE LA MOTTE.	net, 1 00
PIOUS PREPARATION FOR FIRST HOLY COMMUNION. LASANCE. Cloth,	net, 0 75
POCKET MANUAL. A Vest-Pocket Prayer-Book in very large type.	0 25
POPULAR INSTRUCTIONS ON MARRIAGE. GIRARDEY, C.S.S.R.	net, 0 25
Paper, net, 0.13; cloth,	net, 0 25
POPULAR INSTRUCTIONS ON PRAYER. GIRARDEY, C.S.S.R.	net, 0 25
Paper, net, 0.13; cloth,	net, 0 25
POPULAR INSTRUCTIONS TO PARENTS. GIRARDEY, C.S.S.R.	net, 0 25
Paper, net, 0.13; cloth,	net, 0 25
PRAYER-BOOK FOR RELIGIOUS. LASANCE.	net, 1 50
PREACHING. Vol. XV. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
PREPARATION FOR DEATH. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
QUEEN'S FESTIVALS.	0 60
RELIGION OF SOCIALISM, THE CHARACTERISTICS AND. MING, S.J.	net, 1 50
RELIGIOUS STATE, THE. LIGUORI.	net, 0 50
ROSARY, THE CROWN OF MARY. By a Dominican Father.	0 10
ROSARY, THE. Scenes and Thoughts. GARESCHIE, S.J.	net, 0 50
ROSARY, THE MOST HOLY. Meditations. CRAMER.	net, 0 50
SACRAMENTALS. LAMBING, D.D. Paper, net, 0.15; cloth,	net, 0 35
SACRAMENTALS — Prayer, etc. MÜLLER, C.S.S.R.	net, 1 00
SACRED HEART BOOK, THE. LASANCE.	net, 0 75
SACRED HEART, DEVOTION TO, FOR FIRST FRIDAY OF EVERY MONTH. By PERE HUGUET.	net, 0 40
SACRED HEART, NEW MANUAL OF.	0 50
SACRIFICE OF MASS WORTHILY CELEBRATED. CHAIGNON, S.J.	net, 1 50
ST. ANTHONY. KELLER.	net, 0 75
ST. FRANCIS OF ASSISI. Social Reformer. DUBOIS, S.M.	net, 1 00
SECRET OF SANCTITY. ST. FRANCIS DE SALES.	net, 1 00
SERAPHIC GUIDE, THE. A Manual for the Members of the Third Order of St. Francis. By a Franciscan Father.	0 60
SHORT CONFERENCES ON THE LITTLE OFFICE OF THE IM- MACULATE CONCEPTION. RAINER.	net, 0 50
SHORT STORIES ON CHRISTIAN DOCTRINE. From the French by McMAHON.	net, 1 00
SHORT VISITS TO THE BLESSED SACRAMENT. LASANCE.	0 25
SICK CALLS. MULLIGAN.	net, 1 00
SOCIALISM AND CHRISTIANITY. STANG, D.D.	net, 1 00
SOCIALISM. CATHREIN, S.J.	net, 1 50
SODALIST'S VADE MECUM.	0 50
SPIRIT OF SACRIFICE, THE. GIRAUD.	net, 2 00
SPIRITUAL DESPONDENCY AND TEMPTATIONS. MICHEL, S.J.	net, 1 25
SPIRITUAL EXERCISES FOR TEN DAYS' RETREAT. SMETANA.	net, 1 00
SPIRITUAL PEPPER AND SALT. STANG. Paper, net, 0.20; cloth,	net, 0 40
ST. ANTHONY. KELLER.	net, 0 75
ST. FRANCIS OF ASSISI. Social Reformer. DUBOIS, S.M.	net, 1 50
STORY OF THE FRIENDS OF JESUS.	0 60
STORIES FOR FIRST COMMUNICANTS. KELLER, D.D.	0 50
STRIVING AFTER PERFECTION. BAYMA, S.J.	net, 1 00
SUNDAY SCHOOL TEACHER'S GUIDE TO SUCCESS.	net, 0 75
SURE WAY TO A HAPPY MARRIAGE. TAYLOR. Paper, net, 0.13; cloth,	net, 0 25
TALKS WITH LITTLE ONES ABOUT APOSTLES' CREED.	0 60
THOUGHTS ON THE RELIGIOUS LIFE. LASANCE.	net, 1 50
TRUE POLITENESS. DEMORE.	net, 0 75
TRUE SPOUSE OF JESUS CHRIST. LIGUORI. 2 vols.	net, 3 00
The same, one-volume edition,	net, 1 25

VENERATION OF THE BLESSED VIRGIN. ROHNER, O.S.B.	net, 1 25
VEST-POCKET GEMS OF DEVOTION.	0 20
VICTORIES OF THE MARTYRS. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
VISITS, SHORT, TO BLESSED SACRAMENT. LASANCE.	0 25
VISITS TO JESUS IN THE BLESSED SACRAMENT. LASANCE.	net, 0 50
VISITS TO JESUS IN THE TABERNACLE. LASANCE.	net, 1 25
VISITS TO THE MOST HOLY SACRAMENT and to the Blessed Virgin Mary. LIGUORI.	net, 0 50
VOCATIONS EXPLAINED.	0 10
WAY OF INTERIOR PEACE. DE LEHEN, S.J.	net, 1 50
WAY OF SALVATION AND PERFECTION. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50
WAY OF THE CROSS. Paper,	0 05
WAY OF THE CROSS. By a Jesuit Father.	net, 0 15
WAY OF THE CROSS. According to Method of St. Francis Assisi.	net, 0 15
WAY OF THE CROSS. According to Eucharistic Method.	net, 0 15
WAY OF THE CROSS. According to Method of St. Alphonsus Liguori.	net, 0 15
WHAT THE CHURCH TEACHES. DRURY. Paper, net, 0.20; cloth,	net, 0 40

JUVENILES.

ADVENTURE WITH THE APACHES. FERRY.	0 45
ARMORER OF SOLINGEN. HERCHENBACH.	0 45
AS TRUE AS GOLD. MANNIX.	0 45
BELL FOUNDRY, THE. VON SCHACHING.	0 45
BERKELEYS, THE. WIGHT.	0 45
BEARNE, REV. DAVID, S.J.	
SHEER PLUCK.	0 85
MELOR OF THE SILVER HAND.	0 85
THE GUILD BOYS' PLAY AT RIDINGDALE.	0 85
NEW BOYS AT RIDINGDALE.	0 85
THE WITCH OF RIDINGDALE.	0 85
RIDINGDALE FLOWER SHOW.	0 85
CHARLIE CHITTYWICK.	0 85
BISTOURI. By A. MELANDRI.	0 45
BLACK LADY AND ROBIN RED BREAST. By CANON SCHMID.	0 25
BLISSYLVANIA POST-OFFICE. By MARION AMES TAGGART.	0 45
BOB O'LINK. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
BOYS IN THE BLOCK. By MAURICE F. EGAN.	0 25
BUNT AND BILL. CLARA MULHOLLAND.	0 45
BUZZER'S CHRISTMAS. By MARY T. WAGGAMAN.	0 25
BY BRANSCOMBE RIVER. By MARION AMES TAGGART.	0 45
CAKE AND THE EASTER EGGS. By CANON SCHMID.	0 25
CANARY BIRD. By CANON SCHMID.	0 45
CARROLL DARE. By MARY T. WAGGAMAN.	1 25
THE CHILDREN OF CUPA. MANNIX.	0 45
COLLEGE BOY, A. By ANTHONY YORKE.	0 85
COPUS, REV. J. E., S.J.:	
HARRY RUSSELL.	0 85
SHADOWS LIFTED.	0 85
ST. CUTHBERT'S.	0 85
TOM LOSELY: Boy.	0 85
DADDY DAN. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
DAUGHTER OF KINGS, A. HINKSON.	1 25
DIMPLING'S SUCCESS. By CLARA MULHOLLAND.	0 45
DOLLAR HUNT, THE. MARTIN.	0 45
DOUBLE KNOT AND OTHER STORIES, A. WAGGAMAN AND OTHERS.	1 25
EVERY-DAY GIRL, AN. By MARY C. CROWLEY.	0 45
FATAL DIAMONDS. By E. C. DONNELLY.	0 25
FINN, REV. F. J., S.J.	
HIS FIRST AND LAST APPEARANCE. Illustrated.	1 00
THE BEST FOOT FORWARD.	0 85
THAT FOOTBALL GAME.	0 85
ETHELRED PRESTON.	0 85
CLAUDE LIGHTFOOT.	0 85
HARRY DEE.	0 85
TOM PLAYFAIR.	0 85

FINN, REV. F. J., S.J. (Cont'd.)	
PERCY WYNN.	0 85
MOSTLY BOYS.	0 85
"BUT THY LOVE AND THY GRACE."	1 00
MY STRANGE FRIEND.	0 25
FIVE O'CLOCK STORIES; or, The Old Tales Told Again.	0 75
FLOWER OF THE FLOCK, THE, and the Badgers of Belmont. EGAN.	0 85
FOR THE WHITE ROSE. HINKSON.	0 45
FRED'S LITTLE DAUGHTER. SMITH.	0 45
GODFREY THE HERMIT. SCHMID.	0 25
GOLDEN LILY, THE. HINKSON.	0 45
GREAT CAPTAIN, THE. HINKSON.	0 45
HALDEMAN CHILDREN, THE. MANNIX.	0 45
HARMONY FLATS. WHITMIRE.	0 85
HEIR OF DREAMS, AN. O'MALLEY.	0 45
HOP BLOSSOMS. SCHMID.	0 25
HOSTAGE OF WAR, A. BONESTEEL.	0 45
HOW THEY WORKED THEIR WAY. EGAN.	0 75
INUNDATION, THE. SCHMID.	0 45
"JACK." By a Religious of The Society of The Holy Child Jesus.	0 45
JACK HILDRETH AMONG THE INDIANS. 2 vols., each,	0 85
JACK HILDRETH ON THE NILE. TAGGART. Cloth,	0 85
JACK O'LANTERN. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
JUVENILE ROUND TABLE. First, Second, Third Series. Each,	1 00
KLONDIKE PICNIC. DONNELLY.	0 85
LAMP OF THE SANCTUARY. WISEMAN.	0 25
LEGENDS OF THE HOLY CHILD JESUS from Many Lands. LUTZ.	0 75
LITTLE MISSY. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
LOYAL BLUE AND ROYAL SCARLET. TAGGART.	0 85
MADCAP SET AT ST. ANNE'S. BRUNOWE.	0 45
MARY TRACY'S FORTUNE. SADLIER.	0 45
MASTER FRIDOLIN. GIEHL.	0 25
MILLY AVELING. SMITH. Cloth,	0 85
MORE FIVE O'CLOCK STORIES. In Prose and Verse. By a Religious of The Society of The Holy Child Jesus.	0 75
MYSTERIOUS DOORWAY. SADLIER.	0 45
MYSTERY OF CLEVERLY. BARTON.	0 85
MYSTERY OF HORNBY HALL. SADLIER.	0 85
MY STRANGE FRIEND. FINN.	0 25
NAN NOBODY. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
OLD CHARLMONT'S SEED-BED. SMITH.	0 45
OLD ROBBER'S CASTLE. SCHMID.	0 25
ONE AFTERNOON AND OTHER STORIES. TAGGART.	1 25
OUR BOYS' AND GIRLS' LIBRARY. 14 vols., each,	0 25
OVERSEER OF MAHLBOURG. SCHMID.	0 25
PANCHO AND PANCHITA. MANNIX.	0 45
PAULINE ARCHER. SADLIER.	0 45
PETRONILLA. DONNELLY.	0 85
PICKLE AND PEPPER. DORSEY.	0 85
PILGRIM FROM IRELAND. CARNOT.	0 45
PLAYWATER PLOT, THE. WAGGAMAN.	0 60
QUEEN'S PAGE. HINKSON.	0 45
RECRUIT TOMMY COLLINS. BONESTEEL.	0 45
ROSE BUSH. SCHMID.	0 25
ROUND THE WORLD. Vols. I, II, III, IV. Each,	0 85
SEA-GULL'S ROCK. SANDEAU.	0 45
SHADOWS LIFTED. COPUS, S.J.	0 85
SPALDING, REV. H., S.J.:	
THE MARKS OF THE BEAR CLAWS.	0 85
CAVE BY THE BEECH FORK.	0 85
THE SHERIFF OF THE BEECH FORK.	0 85
THE RACE FOR COPPER ISLAND.	0 85
STRONG-ARM OF AVALON. WAGGAMAN.	0 85
SUMMER AT WOODVILLE. SADLIER.	0 45
TALES AND LEGENDS OF THE MIDDLE AGES. DE CAPELLA.	0 75
TALISMAN, THE. SADLIER.	0 60
TAMING OF POLLY. DORSEY.	0 85
THREE GIRLS AND ESPECIALLY ONE. TAGGART.	0 45
THREE LITTLE KINGS. GIEHL.	0 25

TOM'S LUCKPOT. WAGGAMAN.	0 45
TOORALLADY. WALSH.	0 45
TRANSPLANTING OF TESSIE. WAGGAMAN.	0 60
TREASURE OF NUGGET MOUNTAIN. TAGGART.	0 85
TWO LITTLE GIRLS. MACK.	0 45
VIOLIN MAKER, THE. SMITH.	0 45
WAGER OF GERALD O'ROURKE, THE. FINN-THIELE.	net, 0 35
WAYWARD WINIFRED. SADLIER.	0 85
WHERE THE ROAD LED AND OTHER STORIES. SADLIER and others.	1 25
WINNETOU, THE APACHE KNIGHT. TAGGART.	0 85
WRONGFULLY ACCUSED. HERCHENBACH.	0 45
YOUNG COLOR GUARD, THE. BONESTEEL.	0 45

NOVELS AND STORIES.

"BUT THY LOVE AND THY GRACE." FINN, S.J.	1 00
CARROLL DARE. WAGGAMAN.	1 25
CIRCUS RIDER'S DAUGHTER, THE. BRACKEL.	1 25
CONNOR D'ARCY'S STRUGGLES. BERTHOLDS.	1 25
CORINNE'S VOW. WAGGAMAN.	1 25
DION AND THE SIBYLS. KEON.	1 25
FABIOLA. WISEMAN. Illustrated.	0 90
FABIOLA'S SISTER. CLARKE.	1 25
FATAL BEACON, THE. BRACKEL.	1 25
HEARTS OF GOLD. EDHOR.	1 25
HEIRESS OF CRONENSTEIN, THE. Countess HAHN-HAHN.	1 25
HER BLIND FOLLY. HOLT.	1 25
HER FATHER'S DAUGHTER. HINKSON.	net, 1 25
IDOLS; or, The Secrets of the Rue Chaussee d'Antin. De NAVERY.	1 25
IN THE DAYS OF KING HAL. TAGGART.	net, 1 25
IN GOD'S GOOD TIME. ROSS.	1 25
"KIND HEARTS AND CORONETS." HARRISON.	1 25
LET NO MAN PUT ASUNDER. MARIÉ.	1 00
LINKED LIVES. DOUGLAS.	1 50
MARCELLA GRACE. MULHOLLAND. Illustrated Edition.	1 25
MIRROR OF SHALOTT. BENSON.	net, 1 25
MISS ERIN. FRANCIS.	1 25
MONK'S PARDON, THE. De NAVERY.	1 25
MR. BILLY BUTTONS. LECKY.	1 25
"NOT A JUDGMENT." KEON.	1 25
OTHER MISS LISLE, THE. MARTIN.	1 25
OUT OF BONDAGE. HOLT.	1 25
OUTLAW OF CAMARGUE, THE. LAMOTHE.	1 25
PASSING SHADOWS. YORKE.	1 25
PERE MONNIER'S WARD. LECKY.	1 25
PILKINGTON HEIR, THE. SADLIER.	1 25
PRODIGAL'S DAUGHTER, THE. By LELIA HARDIN BUGG.	1 00
RED INN OF ST. LYPHAR, THE. A Romance of La Vendée. SADLIER.	1 25
ROMANCE OF A PLAYWRIGHT. By Vte. HENRI DE BORNIER.	1 00
ROSE OF THE WORLD. MARTIN.	1 25
ROUND TABLE OF AMERICAN CATHOLIC NOVELISTS.	
Complete Stories, with Biographies, Portraits, etc.	1 50
ROUND TABLE OF FRENCH CATHOLIC NOVELISTS.	
Complete Stories, with Biographies, Portraits, etc.	1 50
ROUND TABLE OF GERMAN CATHOLIC NOVELISTS. Illustrated.	1 50
ROUND TABLE OF IRISH AND ENGLISH CATHOLIC NOVELISTS.	
Complete Stories, Biographies, Portraits, etc. Cloth.	1 50
RULER OF THE KINGDOM, THE, and other Phases of Life and Character. KEON.	1 25
SECRET OF THE GREEN VASE. COOKE.	1 25
SENIOR LIEUTENANT'S WAGER.	1 25
SOGGARTH AROON. GUINAN, C.C.	1 25
THAT MAN'S DAUGHTER. ROSS.	1 25
TRAIL OF THE DRAGON.	1 25
TRAINING OF SILAS, THE. DEVINE, S.J.	1 25
TRUE STORY OF MASTER GERARD, THE. SADLIER.	1 25
UNRAVELING OF A TANGLE, THE. TAGGART.	1 25
VOCATION OF EDWARD CONWAY. EGAN.	1 25

WAY THAT LED BEYOND. By J. HARRISON.	1 25
WHEN LOVE IS STRONG. KEON.	1 25
WOMAN OF FORTUNE, A. By CHRISTIAN REID.	1 25
WORLD WELL LOST. By ESTHER ROBERTSON.	0 75

LIVES AND HISTORIES.

AUTOBIOGRAPHY OF ST. IGNATIUS LOYOLA. Edited by O'CONOR, S.J.	net, 1 25
ANGLICAN ORDINATIONS. SEMPLE, S.J.	net, 0 35
BEGINNINGS OF CHRISTIANITY. SHAHAN.	net, 2 00
CHURCH HISTORY. BUSINGER.	0 75
GOLDEN BELLS IN CONVENT TOWERS.	net, 1 00
HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH. BRUECK. 2 vols.,	net, 3 00
HISTORY OF THE CATHOLIC CHURCH. SHEA.	net, 1 50
HISTORY OF THE PROTESTANT REFORMATION. COBBETT.	net, 0 75
LIFE OF BLESSED VIRGIN. Illustrated. ROHNER.	net, 1 25
LIFE OF CHRIST. Illustrated. COCHEM.	net, 1 25
LIFE OF POPE PIUS X.	2 00
LIFE OF MOST REV. JOHN HUGHES. BRANN.	net, 0 75
LIFE OF OUR LORD AND SAVIOUR JESUS CHRIST AND OF HIS VIRGIN MOTHER MARY. BRENNAN. 4to.	net, 10 00
(Easy payment plan, \$1.00 down, \$1.00 a month.)	
LIFE OF SISTER ANNE KATHERINE EMMERICH. WEGENER, O.S.A.	net, 1 75
LIFE OF VEN. MARY CRESCENTIA HOESS. DEGMAN, O.S.F.	net, 1 25
LITTLE LIVES OF SAINTS FOR CHILDREN. BERTHOLD. Ill.	0 60
Cloth,	
LITTLE PICTORIAL LIVES OF SAINTS. New, cheap edition.	1 25
LOURDES. CLARKE, S.J.	1 00
MIDDLE AGES, THE. SHAHAN.	net, 2 00
PATRON SAINTS FOR CATHOLIC YOUTH. 3 vols. Each,	0 60
PICTORIAL LIVES OF THE SAINTS.	net, 2 00
ST. ANTHONY, THE SAINT OF THE WHOLE WORLD.	
WARD. Cloth.	net, 0 75
STORY OF JESUS. Illustrated.	net, 0 60
STORY OF THE DIVINE CHILD. LINGS.	0 60
VICTORIES OF THE MARTYRS. LIGUORI.	net, 1 50

THEOLOGY, LITURGY, SERMONS, SCIENCE, AND PHILOSOPHY.

ANGLICAN ORDINATIONS. SEMPLE, S.J.	0 35
BENEDICENDA. SCHULTE.	net, 1 50
BREVE COMPENDIUM THEOLOGIAE. BERTHIER.	net, 2 50
BUSINESS GUIDE FOR PRIESTS. STANG.	net, 1 00
CANONICAL PROCEDURE. DOSTE.	net, 1 50
CHRISTIAN APOLOGETICS. DEVIVIER.	net, 2 00
CHRISTIAN PHILOSOPHY: God. DRISCOLL.	net, 1 50
CHRIST IN TYPE AND PROPHECY. MAAS, S.J. 2 vols.,	net, 4 00
CHURCH TREASURER'S PEW COLLECTION AND RECEIPT BOOK.	net, 1 00
COMPENDIUM JURIS CANONICI. SMITH.	net, 2 00
COMPENDIUM JURIS REGULARIUM. BACHOFEN.	net, 2 50
COMPENDIUM SACRAE LITURGIAE. WAPPELHORST.	net, 2 50
CONSECRANDA. SCHULTE.	net, 1 50
DATA OF MODERN ETHICS EXAMINED. MING, S.J.	2 00
DIARY, ORDO AND NOTE-BOOK. Cloth, net, 1.00; flexible leather,	net, 1 50
ELEMENTS OF ECCLESIASTICAL LAW. SMITH, D.D. 3 vols., each,	net, 2 50
GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF HOLY SCRIPTURES. GIGOT, S.S.	net, 2 50
GENERAL INTRODUCTION TO THE STUDY OF HOLY SCRIPTURES. Abridged Edition. GIGOT, S.S.	net, 1 50
GOD KNOWABLE AND KNOWN. RONAYNE, S.J.	net, 1 50
GOD CHRISTIAN, THE. ALLEN, D.D. 2 vols.	net, 5 00

HISTORY OF THE MASS AND ITS CEREMONIES IN THE EASTERN AND WESTERN CHURCH. O'BRIEN.	net, 1 25
HUNOLT'S SERMONS. 12 vols.,	net, 25 00
INTRODUCTION TO STUDY OF OLD TESTAMENT. Vol. I and II. Gigot. Each,	net, 1 50
JESUS LIVING IN THE PRIEST. MILLET-BYRNE.	net, 2 00
LIBER STATUS ANIMARUM; or Parish Census Book. Pocket Edition, net, 0.25; Large Edition, half-leather,	net, 3 00
MARRIAGE PROCESS IN THE UNITED STATES. SMITH.	net, 2 50
MANUAL OF THEOLOGY FOR THE LAITY. GEIERMANN. Paper, net, 0.20; cloth,	net, 0 40
MEDULLA FUNDAMENTALIS THEOLOGIAE MORALIS. STANG.	net, 1 00
MORAL PRINCIPLES AND MEDICAL PRACTICE. COPPENS, S.J.	net, 1 00
NATURAL LAW AND LEGAL PRACTICE. HOLAIND, S.J.	net, 2 00
OUTLINES OF DOGMATIC THEOLOGY. HUNTER, S.J. 3 vols.,	net, 1 50
OUTLINES OF NEW TESTAMENT HISTORY. GIGOT. Cloth.	net, 1 50
OUTLINES OF SERMONS. SCHUEN.	net, 2 00
PASTORAL THEOLOGY. STANG, D.D.	net, 1 50
PHILOSOPHIA MORALI, DE. RUSSO.	net, 2 00
POLITICAL AND MORAL ESSAYS. RICKABY, S.J.	net, 1 50
PRAXIS SYNODALIS.	net, 0 75
PRIEST IN THE PULPIT. SCHUECH-LUEBBERMANN.	net, 1 50
REGISTRUM BAPTISMORUM.	net, 3 50
REGISTRUM MATRIMONIUM.	net, 3 00
RELATION OF EXPERIMENTAL PSYCHOLOGY TO PHI- LOSOPHY. DE MERCIER.	net, 0 35
RIGHTS OF OUR LITTLE ONES. CONWAY, S.J. Paper,	0 10
RITUALE COMPENDIOSUM.	net, 0 90
SANCTUARY BOYS' ILLUSTRATED MANUAL. MCCALLEN, S.S.	net, 0 50
SERMONS, ABRIDGED, FOR SUNDAYS. LIGUORI.	net, 1 25
SERMONS FOR CHILDREN OF MARY. CALLERIO.	net, 1 50
SERMONS FOR CHILDREN'S MASSES. FRASSINETTI-LINGS.	net, 1 50
SERMONS FOR THE SUNDAYS AND CHIEF FESTIVALS OF THE ECCLESIASTICAL YEAR. POTTGEISSER, S.J. 2 vols.	net, 2 50
SERMONS FROM THE LATIN. BAXTER.	net, 2 00
SERMONS ON DEVOTION TO THE SACRED HEART. BIERBAUM.	net, 0 75
SERMONS ON THE BLESSED SACRAMENT. SCHEUER- LASANCE.	net, 1 50
SERMONS ON THE ROSARY. FRINGS.	net, 1 00
SHORT SERMONS FOR LOW MASSES. SCHOUPPE, S.J.	net, 1 25
THEORY AND PRACTICE OF THE CONFESSIONAL. SHIELER.	3 50
VADE MECUM SACERDOTUM. Cloth, net, 0.25; Morocco,	net, 0 50

MISCELLANEOUS.

ACROSS WIDEST AMERICA. DEVINE, S.J.	net, 1 50
BENZIGER'S MAGAZINE. The Popular Catholic Family Magazine. Subscription per year,	2 00
BONE RULES; or, Skeleton of English Grammar. TABB.	0 50
CATHOLIC HOME ANNUAL. Stories by Best Writers.	0 25
CORRECT THING FOR CATHOLICS. BUGG.	net, 0 75
ELOCUTION CLASS. O'GRADY.	net, 0 50
GENTLEMAN, A. EGAN.	net, 0 75
HOW TO GET ON. FEENEY.	net, 1 00
HYMN-BOOK.	0 35
LADY, A. Manners and Usages. BUGG.	net, 0 75
LITTLE FOLKS' ANNUAL.	0 10
READINGS AND RECITATIONS FOR JUNIORS. O'GRADY.	net, 0 50
RECORD OF BAPTISMS. 14x10 inches, 3 styles.	3.00, 4.00, 6 00
RECORD OF MARRIAGES. 14x10 inches. 3 styles.	3.00, 4.00, 6 00
SELECT RECITATIONS FOR CATHOLIC SCHOOLS AND ACADEMIES. O'GRADY.	1 00
SONGS AND SONNETS. EGAN.	1 00
SURSUM CORDA. Hymns. Paper, 0.15; cloth,	0 25

SURSUM CORDA. With English and German Text. 0 45
 VISIT TO EUROPE AND THE HOLY LAND. FAIRBANKS. 1 50
 WHAT CATHOLICS HAVE DONE FOR SCIENCE. BRENNAN. net, 1 25
 PRAYER BOOKS.

Benziger Brothers publish the most complete line of prayer-books in this country, embracing Prayer-books for Children; Prayer-books for First Communicants; Prayer-books for Special Devotions; Prayer-books for General Use. Catalogue will be sent free on application.

SCHOOL-BOOKS.

Benziger Brothers' school text-books are considered to be the finest published. They embrace New Century Catholic Readers (Illustrations in Colors); Catholic National Readers; Catechisms; History; Grammars; Spellers; Elocution; Charts.

A HOME LIBRARY FOR \$1 DOWN.

*Original American Stories for the Young, by the
 Very Best Catholic Authors.*

20 COPYRIGHTED BOOKS and a YEAR'S SUBSCRIPTION to
 BENZIGER'S MAGAZINE (in itself a library of good reading.)

Regular Price of Books,	. . .	\$11.70	} Regular Price,
Regular Price of Benziger's Magazine,		<u>2.00</u>	

Special Net Price, \$10.00 \$1.00 Down. \$1.00 a Month.

You get the books at once, and have the use of them, while making easy payments. Send us only \$1.00, and we will forward the books at once. \$1.00 entitles you to immediate possession. No further payment need be made for a month. Afterward you pay \$1.00 a month.

THIS IS THE EASY WAY TO GET A LIBRARY.

*And remember these are the Best Books that can be placed in the hands of
 Catholic Youth AT ANY PRICE.*

ANOTHER EASY WAY OF GETTING BOOKS.

Each year we publish four New Novels by the best Catholic authors. These novels are interesting beyond the ordinary; not strictly religious, but Catholic in tone and feeling.

We ask you to give us a Standing Order for these novels. The price is \$1.25 a volume postpaid. The \$5.00 is not to be paid at one time, but \$1.25 each time a volume is published.

As a Special Inducement for giving us a standing order for these novels, we will give you *free* a subscription to Benziger's Magazine. This Magazine is recognized as the best and handsomest Catholic magazine published. The regular price of the Magazine is \$2.00 a year.

Thus for \$5.00 a year—paid \$1.25 at a time—you will get four good books and receive in addition *free* a year's subscription to Benziger's Magazine. The Magazine will be continued from year to year, as long as the standing order for the novels is in force, which will be till countermanded.

Send \$1.25 for the first novel and get your name placed on the subscription list of Benziger's Magazine.

THE BEST STORIES AND ARTICLES

1000 ILLUSTRATIONS A YEAR

BENZIGER'S MAGAZINE

The Popular Catholic Family Monthly

RECOMMENDED BY 70 ARCHBISHOPS AND BISHOPS

Subscription, \$2.00 a Year

What Benziger's Magazine Gives its Readers:

Three complete novels of absorbing interest—equal to three books selling at \$1.25 each.

Fifty complete stories by the best writers—equal to a book of 300 pages selling at \$1.25.

One thousand beautiful illustrations.

Forty large reproductions of celebrated paintings.

Twenty articles—equal to a book of 150 pages—on travel and adventure; on the manners, customs and home-life of peoples; on the haunts and habits of animals.

Twenty articles—equal to a book of 150 pages—on historic events, times, places, important industries.

Twenty articles—equal to a book of 150 pages—on the fine arts; celebrated artists and their paintings, sculpture, music, etc., and nature studies.

Twelve pages of games and amusements for in-doors and out-of-doors.

Seventy-two pages of fashions, fads, and fancies, gathered at home and abroad, helpful hints for home workers, household column, cooking recipes, etc.

“Current Events,” the important happenings over the whole world, described with pen and pictures.

Twelve prize competitions, with valuable prizes.

